

# **GOD'S PUZZLE SOLVED**

## **Part 1**

**By**

**ART MOKAROW**

***God's Puzzle Solved* is Part 1 of Puzzles – Vol. I.**

**The following books comprise Volume I**

***God's Puzzle Solved*            *Part 1***

***God's Puzzle Completed*    *Part 2***

***The Mystery of God*            *Part 3***

***Prophecy Is Cyclical*        *Part 4***

***God's Mystery Fulfilled*     *Part 5***

**Written By Art Mokarow**

**Copyright TXu 1-167-465 – *God's Puzzle Solved***

**All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.**

# CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	v
<i>CHART (DESIGNED BY DAVID McMULLEN)</i>	vii
<b>IS GOD REAL?</b>	<b>1</b>
<b>GOD'S PUZZLE</b>	<b>37</b>
<b>WHO IS GOD?</b>	<b>65</b>
<b>GOD'S CHARACTER AND PERSONALITY</b>	<b>99</b>
<b>GOD'S LIBRARY</b>	<b>131</b>
<b>GOD'S MIND REVEALED</b>	<b>161</b>
<b>THE TRUE GOSPEL</b>	<b>207</b>
<b>MARRIAGE, THE GREAT MYSTERY</b>	<b>259</b>
<b>THE COVENANTS</b>	<b>303</b>
<b>WHAT WAS ADDED TO THE LAW?</b>	<b>349</b>
<b>THE SPIRIT VS. THE LETTER</b>	<b>363</b>
<b>SATAN – GOD'S HELPER</b>	<b>383</b>
<b>GOD'S ETERNAL FIRE</b>	<b>413</b>
<b>GOD'S KINGDOM</b>	<b>463</b>

## PREFACE

God, The Father and His Son, Jesus, want you to keep *growing spiritually* – all your life. To do so, you need to spend much time in prayer and Bible study. Prayer is your way to talk to God and let Him know your needs and wishes. Reading and studying *The Bible* (His Holy Word) is how God speaks to you.

Through *The Bible*, God reveals to you who He is, what His *purpose is* and *what He wants you to do*. *The Bible* is written as a mystery or a puzzle (Matthew 13:10-11). God states those who seek Him, diligently, will understand The Mystery of His Kingdom (but not necessarily The Mystery of *The Bible* as no one can know everything).

God will, little by little, open your mind to greater understanding. Albert Einstein once said, “*I want to know God’s thoughts...the rest are details.*” This book’s *only purpose* is to piece together *the major parts* of this puzzle, so in your personal Bible Study, your *spiritual understanding* will be increased. Ultimately, a complete story from *Genesis* to *Revelation* will become apparent.

You will understand the great love that The Almighty God and His Son, Jesus have for you. The contents of this book are strictly as *The Bible* reveals. No consideration has been given to any church groups, denominations, sects or ideologies and there is no attachment to any religious group. These contents have been (totally) written as revealed from God’s Word.

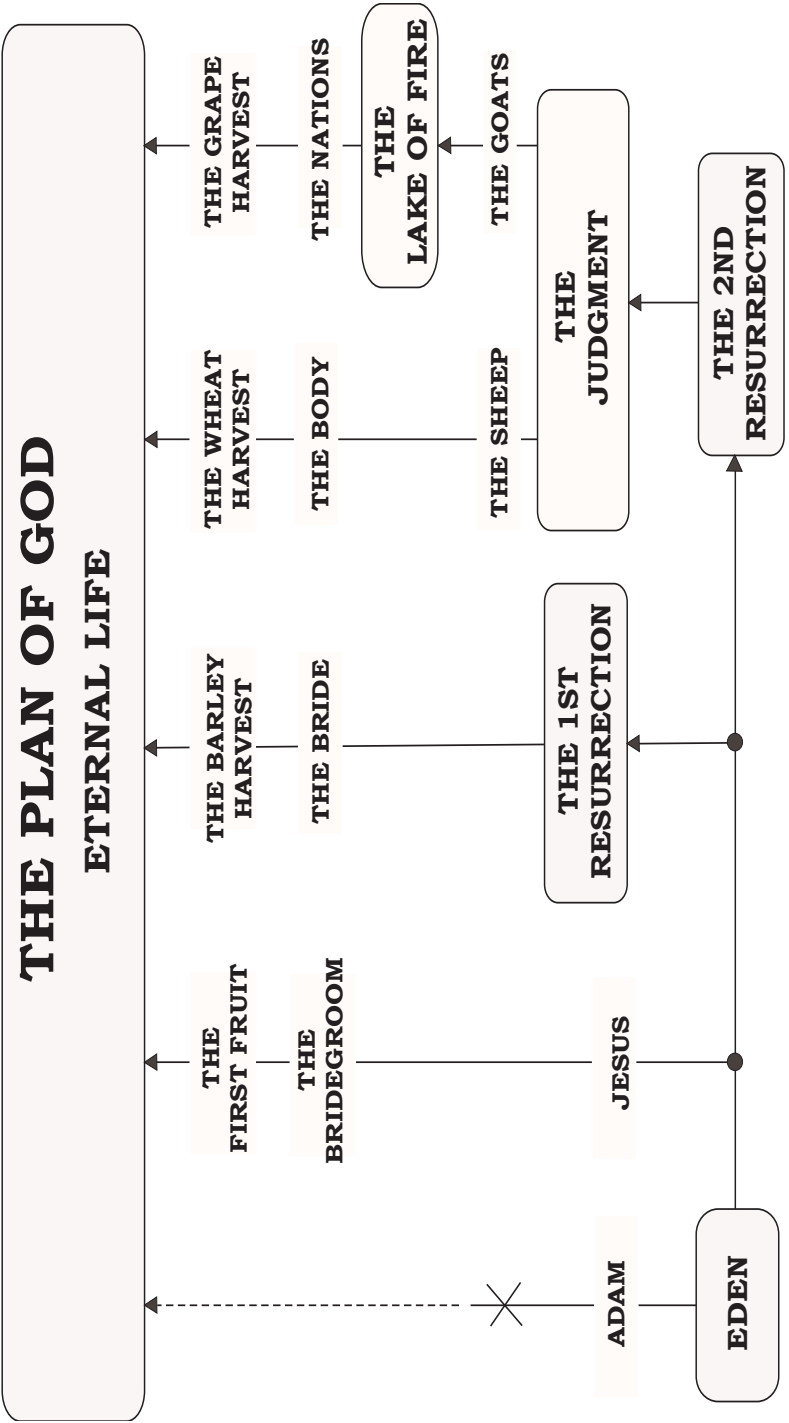
The Apostle Paul states *the most* anyone can know about God’s *truth* is only “*in part*” (I Corinthians 13:9). No person or group has all *the truth*.

**Comments and criticisms are welcomed. Please, if you disagree, include *Scripture* to prove your point. As usual, no money is accepted for these books. All books are absolutely free. We are not a church and are non-denominational. Our job is to spread The Word (freely received – freely given).**

**So far, Art has written 54 books. The last published books are now on a CD disc. You can read all of them on your computer. Please request your free copy. All books can be downloaded *free of charge* from the website. Any biblical questions you may have can be e-mailed or sent by mail.**

**Art Mocarow  
Box 1197  
Montgomery, TX 77356**

**Email:      [art@mocarow.com](mailto:art@mocarow.com) (comments and questions)  
Website:    [www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com](http://www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com) (books)  
              [www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.com](http://www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.com) (articles)**



# Chapter 1

## IS GOD REAL?

Since The Garden of Eden, mankind has approached *life* as a bewildering puzzle. *Creation*, itself, stands before you as the grandest of conundrums. What started *life* and who started it? Why was it started? Why are humans here?

In the search for the answers to *life's questions*, Science has evolved to try to explain it all. Most recently, scientists have given birth to The Theory of Everything. How close are you to really knowing the correct answers to the most profound questions about your *life*?

Many religions, philosophies and sciences have struggled with these issues. *The mystery surrounding the truth* is more complex than any cleric, philosopher, scientist, scholar or all of mankind's thoughts collectively could possibly conjure up. In this search for a reasonable, rational view of *the creation* and *the explanation of life*, you must look at the various possibilities. When you implement simple detective work, coupled with common sense in studying *The Scriptures*, you will finally get a true glimpse of the answers to these questions. Down through the ages, mankind has shown an abundance of evidence that confirms you cannot find the answers to *life's great puzzle*. God, Himself, is The Only One who has these answers. Within the pages of *The Bible*, you will find an outline of His *plan*, which answers *life's puzzling questions*.

## Searching For Answers

When you begin the search for answers, it looks like an impossible puzzle. Yet, the pieces of this puzzle can be put together if you know where to begin. If the outline of *The Bible* is followed carefully, an account of a great, *unconditional Love Story* will be discovered. *God's Puzzle Solved* reveals the most exceptional and incomparable Love Story ever imagined. God's love will explain all of life's puzzling questions. You will know how it all started, what started it and why it was started in the first place. Finally, you will have the answer as to why you have been placed here on this planet.

To understand God and the love He has for all His *creation*, is truly beyond one's human comprehension. No human words are adequate or will ever be sufficient to fully explain *the marvelous plan* your Heavenly Father has for you. What you will find is that your Father has given all the means you need to understand. True science, physics and mathematics have helped solve the complex *equation* called *life*.

## How It All Started

*The Bible* is *mankind's instructional book*. It will show you how to research these age-old questions so that you can find the real answers. *The Book of Job* is one of the oldest books in *The Bible*. It is estimated to have been written from 2,500 to 4,000 years ago. Job not only had many problems but great sufferings. Job's three friends added to his misery by recounting and defining more of his problems. None of them actually came up with the



real answer about why Job was having problems. To appreciate the real questions, God said the following to Job directly.

Job 38:3-7 <sup>3</sup>Gird up now your loins like a man; for I will demand of you, and answer you me. <sup>4</sup>Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if you have understanding. <sup>5</sup>Who has laid the measures thereof, if you know? Or who has stretched the line upon it? <sup>6</sup>Whereupon are the foundations thereof fastened? Or who laid the corner stone thereof; <sup>7</sup>When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?

God tells Job, “<sup>3</sup>*Gird up now your loins like a man.*” Paraphrasing, He asks if Job thinks he knows the answer to *everything*. He wants to know if Job knew who created all things and if he understands *the purpose of life*. God is calling Job to *account*. He asks, “<sup>4</sup>*Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth?*”

## The Foundation Of The Earth

How would you answer these questions if you were Job? “*Who made the foundation of the earth? What was it laid upon?*” God is asking Job very significant and very important questions. Where was Job when all this happened? Where were you? “<sup>5</sup>*Who has laid the measures thereof, if you know? Or who had stretched the line upon it?*” God spoke in terms that Job would understand. Job would, indeed, have known how to construct a building by first surveying the site, laying the foundation and then erecting the structure. But could Job even begin to measure

the earth, the solar system and the universe? Hardly! It has been only in the last few centuries that astronomers and astrophysicists have made accurate measurements of the earth, the solar system and the galaxies. With high-tech instruments like The Hubble Space Telescope and advanced mathematics, scientists are now attempting to measure the vast distances and complex parameters of the universe. This would be compared to “*stretching the line*” (*The Bible’s* measurement) upon it.

So, the questions that God asked Job aren’t ludicrous after all. He is asking, “[Where were you] *when the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?*” It took thousands of years for science to begin to understand the forces that actually hold the earth together. Job did not have the tools of modern science in order to answer God’s penetrating questions.

## A State Of Mind

To prove that God exists, one must understand something about human reasoning. Mankind can always come up with an excuse to explain his own thoughts and personal opinions. When you hear the simple explanations offered by *The Bible*, you can only come to one conclusion. That conclusion is *no one* was there in *the beginning*. Job wasn’t there and neither were you. Only God was there and He reveals the answers in His *word*.

Proverbs 8:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Does not wisdom cry? And understanding put forth her voice? <sup>2</sup>She stands in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths.

In *The Book Of Proverbs*, God reveals *the process of creation* to you. This is the chapter about *wisdom* and the personification of *wisdom*. Some say that *wisdom* refers to Christ, while others say it applies to God. Whether Solomon is talking about Jesus Christ or God, it doesn't matter because the subject here is *wisdom*. What is wisdom? *"Does not wisdom cry? And understanding put forth her voice?"* The Hebrew word for "*wisdom*" is "*hokmah*." It can, also, be translated as "*intelligent skill*." The person who has wisdom possesses skill in intelligence. It means the person is smart or wise.

*"She [meaning wisdom] stands in the top of high places, by the way in the places of the paths."* In other words, in the development of intelligent skills, common sense (logic) can be found all around you. From the beginning, God gave humanity *free choice* to follow Him or to ignore Him. When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden and ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, it was because they wanted to *decide, immediately, for themselves* what was *right* and what was *wrong*. They could have chosen The Tree of Life, which would have, immediately, revealed to them what was *right*. Instead, Adam and Eve wanted to be independent and to decide everything for themselves.

## The Scientific Method

Consider the first loaves of bread ever made. Did the loaves taste good? How many loaves of bread had to be made before the recipe was good enough so that the loaves were really delicious? No doubt it was a process that required some trial and error. This is truly the basis for

the process of The Scientific Method, which is studying by observation, guesswork and trial and error. All this is done to see what is true, logical and makes sense. That is the exact process that humanity has chosen from the time of Adam and Eve. It is that simple. God allows you to decide everything for yourself, for your benefit or demise. Ironically, there is a hunger to want to know why things work a certain way, so man has always explored the unknown.

Proverbs 8:3-5 <sup>3</sup>She cries at the gates, at the entry of the city, at the coming in at the doors. <sup>4</sup>To you, O men, I call; and my voice is to the sons of man. <sup>5</sup>O you simple, understand wisdom: and, you fools, be you of an understanding heart.

God asked Job to stand up like a man and asked where he was when the foundation of the earth was laid. “<sup>5</sup>*Oh you simple, understand wisdom and you fools, be you of an understanding heart.*” The problem is *the heart*. “*The heart*” is the term used by *The Bible* to define “*the organ of emotional motivation.*” With your heart, you feel everything emotionally. In general, mankind doesn’t want to find out how simple it is to prove that God exists. Too many individuals make decisions based on the emotions of their hearts. Few use the logic of their minds. This is what Adam and Eve did. Make sure that you have a heart that is motivated by common sense (a heart that has logic and understanding).

## A Matter Of Faith

It is often said that in order to know God, it is a matter of

**faith. However, it takes more faith to believe in Science than it does to believe in God. You must have more faith to believe in evolution than to believe in God.**

**Proverbs 8:6-7** *“Hear; for I will speak of excellent things; and the opening of my lips shall be right things. <sup>7</sup>For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.*

*“Hear, for I will speak of excellent things [God speaking to you]; And the opening of my lips shall be right things.”* Some people give religious words *“mystical meanings”* for their own purposes. They do not take The Words in *The Bible* for the basic, simple reality they express. Instead, it is common for critics to explain them using vague and obscure meanings. Either that or else these words are made to fit into some mystical belief or into their religious system.

## **Destructive Religion**

Clearly, religion can be used for destructive purposes. God’s *messages* can become twisted, obfuscated and variously interpreted to fit anyone’s agenda (whether for good or evil). God tells you that when He opens His lips, He will disclose *“very excellent things.”* He will tell you what is right and good. His mouth speaks only the truth, *“<sup>7</sup>For my mouth shall speak truth; and wickedness is an abomination to my lips.”* God declares that He is telling you *only* what is *right* and *true*.

**Proverbs 8:22-23** <sup>22</sup>The LORD possessed me in the beginning of his way, before his works of old. <sup>23</sup>I was

set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was.

Where can you get wisdom and understanding? Who is going to tell you the real truth, so you know the right way to think? God, through Solomon, is talking about wisdom and how wisdom existed long before *the creation of the universe*. Intellectual skill existed before the universe. “<sup>23</sup>*I was set up from everlasting.*” The word “*everlasting*” in Hebrew is “*olam,*” meaning “*eon*” or “*age.*”

### How Long Is Forever?

When God tells you that something is “*forever,*” then it actually means “*age lasting.*” There are many different “*age-lasting*” periods. Some call it “*dispensation,*” as in “*The Noachian Dispensation*” or “*The Dispensation of Grace.*” “*Dispensation*” is an age-lasting period during which God accomplishes His *purpose* for mankind. So, God is telling you that through all the different ages, there is *no time* for Him. God does not need a wrist watch.

Malachi 3:6 For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore you sons of Jacob are not consumed.

God says, “*I change not.*” If God never changes, never had *a beginning* and will never have *an end*, then time means nothing to God. He is telling you about age-lasting events that do happen, as in the beginning of the universe. “*I was set up* [speaking of wisdom] *from everlasting, from the beginning or ever the earth was*” (Proverbs 8:23). So, this is going back to *the creation of all things*. You can know how it all happened.

## Seeking Wisdom

Everyone must seek wisdom. To get wisdom, an individual must seek understanding (truth) along with knowledge. The Hebrew word “*yadá*” in English means “*knowledge*” or “*certainly certain.*” When the word “*knowledge*” is used in *The Bible*, it is talking about *facts*. It means “*truth.*” There are no *ifs*, *ands* or *buts*. Rather, it is *certainly certain*. That is true knowledge. No theories, no conjecture, just that which is “*certainly certain.*”

Romans 1:16-19 <sup>16</sup>For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God to salvation to every one that believes; to the Jew first and also to the Greek. <sup>17</sup>For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. <sup>18</sup>For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; <sup>19</sup>Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God has showed it to them.

In *Romans*, God talks about *the beginning of creation*. Paul writes about the actual process of *creation* itself. He tells you how it all came about and the reason for it. He makes clear that humanity is without excuse when asking whether there is a God or whether God created everything.

## Two Groups

God separates people into *two groups*. *The first group* is pliable and willing to understand, but *the second group*,

purposely, is not interested in wanting to understand *the truth*. They couldn't care less how or why the universe was made. *The Truth of God* is revealed through *increasing faith*. In other words, if you believe God, listen and hear Him through His *word*.

Only then, will you begin to understand and grow in wisdom. In the beginning, it takes *faith*. As God reveals Himself and His *power*, a greater sense of clarity will be revealed to you. “<sup>17</sup>*As it is written, the just shall live by faith.*” Here is *the first group* of human beings who, by *faith*, have decided to believe God and the message of *The Gospel*. By doing so, they experience an understanding of The Power of God. “<sup>18</sup>*For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness.*”

*The second group* of individuals consists of The Atheists and Agnostics (those who do not believe). Atheists refuse to believe and The Agnostics don't know what to believe. Scientists are divided. Some, who believe in God, have discovered that *the laws of science* help reveal The True Living God. Others believe the universe started by *accident* with no *intelligent* First Cause (God).

## Creation Versus Non-Creation

“<sup>18</sup>*For the wrath of God is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men.*” Those who do not believe in God are considered to be *the ungodly* or *unrighteous*. “*Unrighteousness*” means “*you are doing wrong.*” Of course, this is an opinion from those who believe in God as The Creator. The primary trouble concerns



those whose opinions (after seeking proof) are *right* and those whose opinions (without seeking proof) are *wrong*. You must recognize *the truth* in the statement, “<sup>19</sup>*Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them.*” Be sure to understand the point God is telling you through The Apostle Paul. God can be known! Yes, you can prove that God exists. The Greek word for “*manifest*” is “*phaneros*” which means “*utterly obvious.*” He said, “<sup>19</sup>*For God has showed it to them.*” This refers to *the two groups of people*. One group, through *faith*, believes in God. They believe that God, being *The First Cause* or *The Beginner of Everything*, is *The One* who made all things.

*This group* believes by faith. As they believe and continue to study and learn (little by little), the true concepts become clearer. *The second group* chooses to live by their preconceived ideas. God allows them to believe a lie as a result of their personal opinions. All humanity fits into one of *these two groups*. God allows everyone to choose to either be with Him or without Him. Either way, God is with you and ultimately you find that everyone will come to *the truth*.

## How God Reveals Himself

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

What maintains the universe? There are invisible forces that uphold everything in the physical universe. Look at some of those forces and how they reveal God, “<sup>20</sup>*For the*

*invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen*" (physically seen or perceived).

God tells you where you must look to understand Him and His *power*. God tells you *the things that are made* reveal Him and His *power*. The words "*the things that are made*" translated into Greek are, "*ho poiema*," which means "*the creation*," "*work*" or "*activity*." Everything that God has created which can be seen, perceived or detected (whether observable or hidden) reveal Him.

$$F = G \frac{m_1 m_2}{r^2}$$

Where:

F = force due to gravity

G =  $6.672 \times 10^{11} \text{ m kg}^{-1} \text{ s}^{-2}$   
(the Universal Gravitational Constant)

m1, m2 = mass

r = distance between masses

## The Invisible Things

To whom can these things be revealed? They are revealed to everyone! God leaves everyone all of the clues (by means of all things that are made). There will always be someone who will ask, "*If there is a God, why doesn't He show Himself?*" Actually, God does reveal Himself, "<sup>20</sup>*For the invisible things of Him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood.*" God discloses (in the texts) that there were *visible* and *invisible things* when the universe was made. The fundamental particles and forces of nature, *from the creation of the world*, reveal God's *power* and *divinity*. Science calls this "*Particle Physics*."

Gaze upward into the heavenly expanse. Behold the ocean of stars that are cast into the firmament. These are stars which appear as little diamonds. Witness the spectrum of

spectacular colors as the billowy clouds roll by before the sun sets below the horizon. When you see all these wondrous sights in the universe unfolding before your very eyes, there can be no doubt that there is a God who created it all for you.

Still, as overpowering and beautiful as the night sky is, the proof of God is found in all the invisible fundamental forces in the universe. You can prove the invisible things of God, “<sup>20</sup>*even His eternal power and Godhead...by the things that are made, so that they are without excuse.*” The essence of

God is His *invisible power*. For now, eliminate religious mysticism and the personal opinions of men. Accept The Word of God for what it says.

$$E = hf$$

Where:  
 E = energy  
 $h = 6.626 \times 10^{-34} \text{ m J s}$   
 (Planck's Constant)  
 f = frequency

## Four Fundamental Forces

There are *four fundamental* forces in the world that are invisible – but the effects of those forces are visible. These forces interact between the various sub-atomic particles. They determine the large-scale behavior of matter throughout the universe. The first force is *Gravity* (Newton's Law of Gravitation) which states that every particle in the universe attracts every other particle in the universe. It has a force proportional to the mass of the particles and inversely proportional to the square of the distance between them (see formula).

The more mass that something has, the greater the gravi-

tational pull that is exerted. However, gravity is the weakest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with the square of the distance and extends to infinity. Have you ever seen gravity? No one has, because gravity is invisible. However, no one can deny its existence, because you can feel it, experience it and see its affects. When you jump in the air, there is a force that pulls you down. It is invisible, but it is undeniably there doing its specially “designated job.” The second type of invisible force is *Electromagnetism*, which can be explained as waves (radio and TV signals). Are these waves visible? Can you see them? If so, where are they? Are they invisible? Electromagnetic forces include gamma rays, ultra-violet rays, x-rays and so forth.

$$E = mc^2$$

Where:

E = energy

m = mass

c = the speed of light

## What Is Light?

One of the most amazing forces is *light*. Light can be very bright but you don't actually see *the light waves* themselves. Electric lamps light a room or an object. You can pass your hand through the light but you can't feel the light itself. When you grab some light waves, you have captured nothing. You can't grab light waves. Electricity goes through a light bulb, heats the filament and diffuses the light on to the table or throughout the room. Nonetheless, the forces at work are all invisible. Science has found that light has waves just like the ocean has waves. The more waves per unit, the greater the frequency, which means more *light energy*. Interestingly, you find that, “*God is light*” (I John 1:5). The word for “*light*” in Greek

is “*phos*” from which you get the word “*photon*.” Photons transmit light energy. Light is an invisible electromagnetic force.

The third invisible force is *The Strong Nuclear Force*. This force acts within the nucleus of atoms in order to hold together the protons and neutrons. It is the strongest of the four forces. It diminishes exponentially with distance to the seventh power and extends to infinity. Einstein developed a formula based on this third invisible force. His famous equation equates mass and energy (see formula). Mass is anything that occupies space and has weight, such as the earth, a rock or a tiny piece of dust. The total mass of the atoms of an object multiplied by the speed of light squared equals *energy*! Light travels at 186,300 miles per second. If you take an object like a rock or even the earth itself and multiply its mass by the speed of light squared, you get energy. Indeed, this is an incredible amount of energy. This equation is the foundation of nuclear weapons. And yet, these subatomic forces are invisible as well.

### Power In A Pint

A pint of water converted into energy would yield enough energy to supply The United States with electricity for twelve days. On this basis, one fifty-gallon barrel of water could provide The U.S. with enough electricity to last ten years! This goes to show the enormous amount of power potential when matter is reduced to pure energy.

The fourth invisible force is *The Weak Nuclear Force*. This force, like the Strong Nuclear Force, also operates within the nucleus of an atom. It governs the process of radioac-

tive decay. The sun's thermonuclear reactions would not be able to function without it. The Weak Nuclear Force is necessary for the buildup of heavy nuclei. God told you about all this in *The Book of Romans*. This concerns *the forces*, the invisible forces, that you can *discover in the material universe* that discloses God's *power*. All forces, visible and invisible, come from God and reveal Him by *the very powers* they contain.

Romans 1:21-23 <sup>21</sup>Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup>Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools. <sup>23</sup>And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man and to birds and four-footed beasts and creeping things.

**Ironically, there was a time in the beginning when God (through an angel) was in Eden. This was when everyone, including Adam, Eve, Abel and Cain, knew God personally (after Abel was slain by Cain, God had to be sought until the time of Noah). “<sup>21</sup>Because that, when they knew God, they glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations.”**

**They didn't have wisdom. They didn't stick to understanding or to true knowledge and facts, “<sup>21</sup>and their foolish heart was darkened. <sup>22</sup>Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools.” God calls an evolutionist who doesn't believe in Him “a fool.” “<sup>23</sup>And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God.” What was The Glory? The Glory was from these invisible forces that manifested God's *power*.**

## Exchanged Glory

Then, they changed Him from a glorious, incorruptible God into *an object*. The God who is omniscient, omnipotent, all knowing and all-powerful, with all His capabilities, was about to be reduced into *a mere idol*. They reduced God into an object made of gold, silver, wood, granite, marble, cement, ceramic or any other convenient material.

Is it any wonder that God became angry? Parents can perhaps empathize, in a very small degree, with the hurt God feels. This is similar to when a child is told a fact but the child refuses to believe. “*Don’t touch the hot stove because it will burn you.*” But the child touches it nonetheless. Parents commiserate with the children’s pain because they know what a painful experience it is. God is hurt when you do not believe His truths. It truly hurts Him.

Matthew 23:37 <sup>37</sup>O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, you that kills the prophets and stones them which are sent to you, how often would I have gathered your children together, even as a hen gathers her chickens under her wings and you would not!

Surely, you can understand why Christ, The Son, is also hurt. When He saw Jerusalem, He brought the above message to His children, Israel. They changed His Father, the incorruptible God, into an image made corrupt by man. God, in the eyes of His *creation*, had been fashioned into an idol. He was compared to the image of birds, fish, creeping things and four-footed beasts!

## Why Study Science?

When studying science, you can confirm many *biblical truths*. But understand that *the result* of scientific investigation will be *wrong* if it does not point to God. Ironically, there are many major splits and divisive theories among scientists. Some say “*the world is facing a greenhouse effect.*” Others point to a forthcoming *ice age*. Some say humanity impacts the greenhouse effect, while others say it is arrogant to think that mankind can significantly *alter* nature.

Some scientists believe God is The Creator while other scientists, who don't understand Him, will not even acknowledge His *existence*. Instead, they teach everything that goes against God. They promote their evolutionist conclusions in volumes of books that are taught in many of the school systems. What possible chance do students have to learn *the truth* about God? Schools are teaching children the opposite of what God is. It is a big statement to make, but it is universally accepted by believers and non-believers alike. The statement is that evolution is not a fact! Evolution, they proudly declare, happens by accident (no intellect, design or intended law). It is just *plain time and chance* – a pure accident!

## God Discloses What He Is

John 4:23-24 <sup>23</sup>But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. <sup>24</sup>God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.



Biblically, God tells you about *the invisible things* that disclose His *power*. When Jesus Christ was talking to a Samaritan woman about the worship of God, she stated that Samaritans worship God in Mount Gerizim, while The Jews worship God in Jerusalem. Jesus Christ told this Samaritan woman that “<sup>23</sup>*the hour comes and now is when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him.*” Why? “<sup>24</sup>*God is a Spirit.*”

## What Is Spirit?

As used in *The Old Testament*, the word “*Spirit*,” in Hebrew, is “*ruah*” which means “*strong wind*.” In *The New Testament*, the word in Greek “*pneuma*” is used (from which you get the word “*pneumatic*”). It also means “*wind*,” but it is infinitely more potent. In Greek, it translates to “*a blast of wind*” or something forceful and full of energy. So, God is *energy* just like the wind. In The Netherlands, the people use many windmills. No one can see the energy from the wind, but you do see the result just as you see the results of light. It is remarkable that wind has the power to make electricity, to turn on light bulbs and to run all sorts of equipment and machinery. Spirit is not a vapor. It is not a smoke-like appearance. It is a force which contains great energy.

I John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; <sup>2</sup>(For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father

and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you, that your joy may be full.

There are some amazing facts in *The Bible*. When dealing with the beginning of creation, “<sup>1</sup>*That which was from the beginning* [Speaking of Jesus], *which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes* [John, The Apostle, lived with Christ], *which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life*; <sup>2</sup>*For the life was manifested* [made obvious] *and we have seen it and bear witness.*”

## How To Be An Apostle

To be an Apostle, they had to see Christ just as Paul saw Him when he was struck down on the road to Damascus. Consequently, the text goes on, “*and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father, was manifested to us*; <sup>3</sup>*That which we have seen and heard declare we to you.*” The Apostles are telling you about *this being* who was from the very beginning and what He is like, “*that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with his Son Jesus Christ.* [He writes this because] <sup>4</sup>*And these things we write to you, that your joy may be full.*” When you learn the process of understanding God's word, it will fill you with great joy. As you learn *the truth*, you will understand that God started it all. He created everything you see and everything you don't see. He had *a specific purpose in the way* He made all things. It was not an accident. It was the only right way to create everything.

## The Perfect Plan

Astoundingly, God made His Creation and His *plan perfect* in order to reveal Himself to those who choose to know Him. This is for those who want to be part of His *plan*. “*This is the message which we have heard of Him and declare to you, that God is light and in Him is no darkness at all*” (I John 1:5).

One of the hidden forces discovered, scientifically, is the electromagnetic force of light. God is *light-energy* – an *invisible force* that reveals *the power* of God. The energy force of photons emanate from God. Everything, but everything, comes from God. “*God is light and in him is no darkness at all.*” When mass is dense enough, nothing can escape, including light. This is called a *Black Hole*. Black Holes possess such gravitational power that they absorb light completely and reflect none. When *matter*, even a star, gets sucked into a dense Black Hole, the matter disappears completely – forever. God does not have any darkness. God is totally *spirit* and *light*. Christians who believe God, in *faith*, will grow in wisdom. They will start to have understanding and can, then, see the true facts (Romans 1). They will perceive His power through the visible and invisible things that are all around them. A small group of scientists are now finding this to be true. You have seen that God, Himself created these individual forces.

You see that *Spirit* is nothing more than wind or energy. God is *light*. The wave energies (photons), the gravitational forces and the nuclear forces all depict how God created the universe (Romans 1).

## Accidental Creation Not Possible

**Job had some insights into this and now, you will be exposed to the questions God asked Job:**

**Job 38:4** Where were you when I laid the foundations of the earth? Declare, if you have understanding.

***“Understanding,”*** as you have learned, is ***“logic”*** or ***“common sense”*** coupled with ***“wisdom”*** which is ***“the skill to handle the facts*** (the knowledge and the truth).” Put some of this knowledge together.

In *Job*, God explains the earth was like a circle. Job knew the earth was not flat, although some people thought it was well into The Middle Ages. How did God position the foundation of the earth? Scientists tell you that *gravitational pull* depends on the mass and distance. Interestingly, the earth does not orbit in a perfect circle but elliptically around the sun. The sun, having a much larger mass than the earth, exerts a stronger gravitational pull. The moon has a smaller mass, less gravity and orbits the earth. The moon is the major contributor to the tides. The effect of the sun on the tides is less than half that of the moon.

Many Christians ask, ***“How can people believe in evolution?”*** Evolution works on two principles: 1) survival of the fittest and 2) adaptation to changing environmental conditions. All this is supposed to happen entirely by chance. In other words, when a species is trying to survive, it adapts to its environment in whatever way it possibly can. So, the scientists who believe in evolution have caused their own problems. They put a date on the uni-

verse regarding its age. Quite dogmatically, they say the universe is 10-12 billion years old, give or take a billion or so. Some say it could be 20 billion years old. With all that exists in the universe, evolution just does not have enough time to work on a time-and-chance basis. Without sufficient time, evolution cannot take place. Mathematically, it would take far more time than the evolutionists have calculated.

### Molecular Biology

Hubert Yockey, author of *Information Theory and Molecular Biology*, published a monograph on the microbiology of the information theory and employed the mathematics necessary to determine the probability of creating a protein by mindless chance (as specified by evolution).

Accordingly, *the probability* of evolving one molecule of iso-1-cytochrome c, a small protein common in plants and animals, is an astounding one chance in  $2.3 \times 10^{75}$ . This is one chance in more than: 1 000.

And that is what is required to just evolve one molecule. As a point of reference, it is estimated that the number of atoms in the visible universe is approximately  $1 \times 10^{79}$  – that is 1 followed by 79 zeros. Or, to put it in evolutionary terms, if a random mutation occurs every second from the alleged beginning of a 20-billion-year-old earth, then to date that one protein molecule would be only in an extremely small percentage of completion (i.e.,  $2.7 \times 10^{-56}$  %).

## How Many Lifetimes?

How many lifetimes would it take to evolve enough molecules to make a human being? With approximately  $1.6 \times 10^{27}$  molecules in the average adult human body, it could take *a bewildering  $5.8 \times 10^{84}$  lifetimes!* The evolution theory requires an almost implausible amount of time for mankind to be created. Evolution is logically improbable. Yockey concluded, "*The origin of life, by chance in a primeval soup, is impossible in probability, in the same way that a perpetual motion machine is impossible in probability.*"

If the foundation of the earth was to be laid, there had to be time. In fact, by evolution's own criteria, it had to be a great deal of time. The earth remains in its orbit around the sun by gravitation. How much time was needed for the earth (all these forces) to come into existence and then to remain in its stable orbit? Forever! On a mathematical basis, the probability of species evolving over the evolutionary time period is not feasible, even if the earth had existed for a hundred billion years. *Evolution* just isn't based upon *scientific facts*.

## Law Of Probability

The Law of Probability should be enough to discredit evolution. The geologic timetable of fossils, which the evolutionists so fondly embrace, contributes to the invalidation of evolution. In the final analysis, the theory of evolution remains a theory.

It is an assumption that just doesn't add up logically. The world famous scientist Stephen J. Gould, co-authored a

paper in 1977 in which he proposed the theory of *Punctuated Equilibrium*. Rather than a slow, continuous progression of species, *Punctuated Equilibrium* is characterized by long periods of virtual standstill (equilibrium) *punctuated* by episodes of very fast development with new life forms. The lack of proof of Darwinian *evolution* in the fossil record, going all the way back to the earliest geological time periods, fostered this idea of *Punctuated Equilibrium*. This theory has been developed as a cover for *the failure of the theory of evolution*.

## Punctuated Equilibrium

*Punctuated Equilibrium* is the theory (which in itself lacks scientific proof) that *new species pop-up* at some point and did not evolve over long periods of time. The cause of these new species is some sort of random environmental change or mutation. The entire perspective revealed by the fossil evidence is claimed to demonstrate evolutionary change.

According to Gould, the appearance of *pop-up species* in the fossil record must happen very fast in small isolated areas. Denton, another scientist, has cited studies (based upon modern species) that suggest up to 85% of all animals are preserved in the fossil records.

He further states that there is absolutely no reason whatsoever to assume the fossil record is anything other than a highly accurate and detailed account of the development of life on earth. However, the sudden arrival of almost all modern phyla of invertebrate life is a direct contradiction to the prediction made by Darwin's theory of *gradual*

*change and intermediate forms.* In other words, The Darwinian Theory of Evolution is held as *an article of faith* and is devoid of *a provable factual basis.*

After The Big Bang happened and the universe started to expand, how long did it take for gravity, electromagnetism and the strong and weak nuclear forces to evolve into their current state (now seen through the telescopes)? This includes planets revolving around stars, stars revolving around their galactic centers and groups of galaxies moving through space. Scientists haven't allowed enough time (10-20 billion years) for this to take place. Twenty billion multiplied by twenty billion years is still not enough. It is mathematically impossible for creation to begin in evolutionary terms.

### Precise Mathematical Balance

All the factors needed for life to exist on earth have to occur in a precise mathematical balance. The earth needs to be the right distance from the sun. If it is too close, the earth is burned into cosmic dust. If it is too far, the earth turns frigidly cold. The moon must have its mathematical gravitational pull exactly in balance with the earth's gravitational pull. If it were off just a fraction, the earth would be flooded with huge tidal waves. One scientist, Hugh Ross, estimated the probability of finding a planetary body with the necessary parameters for supporting life – *Probability for a Life Support Body, An Estimate of the Probability for Attaining the Necessary Parameters for Life Support and Reasons to Believe.*

After analyzing 165 parameters for life support, he con-



cluded that there was less than 1 chance in  $10^{182}$  that even one such planet would occur anywhere in the universe. How in the world could evolution *accidentally* get it all mathematically correct? How can scientists expect you to follow this, mathematically, when their theories virtually have no substance?

## The First Cause

Some scientists think, from the beginning, there wasn't a God. How do they believe it all started? One of the latest theories is that the cosmos got its start from *a little light wave*. Now, what was the origin of that little light wave? In other words, what started it all? The evolutionists theorize that it all started from nothing. How could everything start from *nothing*? Light, traveling at 186,300 miles per second, can only do so through a vacuum. What is a vacuum?

It means there is nothing. There's nothing there because if you put any mass in front of light, it either gets diffused (spreads out when it hits the mass), is refracted (dissipates as it breaks up) or it is reflected off at an angle. That's what happens to light.

## The First Wave

So what started the first wave? You don't even have to assume it is *a wave*. Evolutionists are in error because the first wave cannot come from nothing. It had to start from something. It's a very simple premise. You cannot start something from nothing. *Nothing plus nothing equals nothing*. That's not complicated. It doesn't take

a rocket scientist to understand this. You can't get something from nothing, that is an absolute truth. What if there was something there, either God or something else? Well, if it wasn't God but something else, then what started *that something*? Scientists say *something* else started *that something*. Well, what started *that something*, when *something* else started *that something*? As you can see, this thinking process goes on endlessly. In other words, it either all started from *something* or there never was a start. If there never was a start, you can't have things evolve into *something*.

In reality, you are left with only one conclusion, whatever there was that was *in the beginning, that something* had to *always be*. The circular trap that there was always something before something else never ends. You will never reach a beginning. Realistically, you know there must be a *beginning*. René Descartes (1596-1650), a French philosopher, published in 1641 his most famous work, *Meditations on First Philosophy*. In this set of six essays, he speculated on, among other things, his actual existence. His conclusion is the famous Latin phrase, "*cogito, ergo sum*" ("*I think, therefore, I am*"). He said, "*Since I'm conscious and I'm here, then I'm here. I exist because I think.*"

## Questions About Evolution

Well, God says, "*Since you see the universe, therefore, it was created.*" It could not have started from nothing. When you ask questions about evolution, you deal with these answers. Evolutionists say, "*I don't know,*" or evade the question and attempt to throw you off track. It is usually one or the other.

Dealing with the forces and throwing time into evolution, there is simply just not enough time to make sense of the theory of evolution. You would need *an uncalculated amount of time*. Mathematically, an equation cannot be created to resolve the evolutionary conundrum. You couldn't prove it if you tried! There's not enough time. (You can't do an  $E = mc^2$ ). Did the four fundamental forces exist before The Big Bang? If so, where did they come from? Most know there are asexual things in the world such as amoebas. Amoebas self-produce. If a scientist believes in evolution, he might say, "*Well, you know, the amoeba – it reproduces itself.*" Yes, that's a fact. But how in the world did we evolve from this amoeba to a species requiring another being for reproduction?

### The First Human

How did the first human being (not considering Adam and Eve) come into being? How long could that human – that very first one, whether it was male or female – wait around for the other one to come along in order to reproduce? How about the first wolf? How about the first orchards, bushes and flowers, which didn't know that bees had to pollinate them? They never would have survived and you certainly can't adapt to what doesn't happen. That's just another strike against evolution and reveals how ridiculous the theory truly is. Species do, indeed, disappear through environmental changes, whether caused by man or by nature. But for all the species that exist in the macro-world (the huge world including the universe around you) and the micro-world (the viral and bacterium) which require a mate for reproduction, how long did it take those mates to come into being? Evolution is not the answer.

Ultimately, if you have these micro and macro species all over the earth, you should see the changes all over the world. But you find not one missing link. What you see is one *kind* born after its own *kind*. The changes that evolution predicts are not found. They are no where. There are just *too many* things in God's *creation!* To evolve to all the myriads of species that have ever existed, there is just not enough time to calculate it logically. Even if the earth and the universe are ten to twelve billion years old – that is still not enough time. Even a hundred billion years would still not be enough time for every microbe, every plant, every animal and every human being to evolve into what they are today.

## God, The Designer

There just was not enough time for everything to evolve from nothing. God, The Designer and The Creator is *a being* who had to always exist.

Exodus 3:13-14 <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say to them? <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God's name depicts The First Cause. Moses was given the big job by God to lead his people out of Egypt. Moses asked, "<sup>13</sup>*When I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name?*" God said

to Moses, “<sup>14</sup>*I AM THAT I AM.*” This is written this way because in Hebrew it really means, “*I’ve always existed, I exist now and I always will exist* (in the future).” You may ask, “*How can it be that God always existed?*” If something didn’t always exist, does that mean there was something before that? If there was always something before that, there was no beginning because there was always something before that. It makes more sense for there to be a First Cause that had *all intelligence* and *all power* (as *creation* itself shows). The forces were always there from The Beginning of Creation. So states true science.

## The Choice

On one side, you have evolutionists who say the universe and everything in it happened by accident. On the other side, you have God who is revealed through *the things that are made*, including the four fundamental forces. Which of these two approaches makes more sense? Which choice is wiser to believe in? It takes more *faith* to believe in mindless evolution than it takes to believe in the God who always was, who is today and who always will be.

1 Corinthians 2:14 But the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.

Putting this into perspective, it is far more rational and much more logical to say there is an all-mighty *Being* with *force* and *power*. The Being is eternal and The One who *intelligently* created everything. Anyone with common sense would find it illogical to come to the conclusion that

it all happened from nothing (happenstance). The reason evolutionists do not see it and why they cannot see it is, “<sup>14</sup>*the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness to him: neither can he know them, because they are spiritually discerned.*” You now understand the invisible forces that cannot be seen. They hold up the foundation of the world and they maintain the smallest atom to the largest galaxy in its ordered arrangement. God says once you start to learn about His invisible forces, you are without excuse. God reveals His proof through His *Word* that *creation* came only from Him. God is *real*. God *exists*. It is *an absolute*.

## Time For Choosing

It is your turn to choose. True science has shown how the universe was made and how it exists by these fundamental forces. Science, however, has to admit that the existence of these forces before *The Big Bang* cannot be known. Even though *The Bible* does not state the universe started from a Big Bang, it agrees with the plausibility of it when God rolled out the universe as a curtain. It clearly shows that real science does indeed agree with God's *word*.

Psalm 104:2 Who covers yourself with light as with a garment: who stretches out the heavens like a curtain.

God tells you these invisible forces come from Him. He created *The Big Bang*. God stretched “<sup>2</sup>*out the heavens like a curtain,*” perhaps just as you open up a curtain or a drape. Science calls it *The Fabric of The Universe*. As detailed earlier, evolution is loaded with inconsistencies.

It has been demonstrated here that if you give evolution the benefit of the doubt (considering all the matter in the universe), the only conclusion you can come to is there just isn't enough time for everything to evolve in a slow, uniform manner. The Second Law of Thermodynamics states that things do not go from the simple to complex, but rather, everything, *including creation itself*, is in the process of decay.

### What Is A Theory?

*A theory* is just a model of what scientists guess as to what could possibly be the answer. One of the world's most prominent scientists of our day, Stephen W. Hawking, states in his book, *A Brief History of Time* (pages 140-141), "So long as the universe had a beginning, we could suppose it had a Creator." Many scientists, rather than admit that the universe had a beginning and that there has to be a God, persistently search for proof that the universe never had a beginning. Hence, *an omnipotent, omnipresent and timeless designer* was unnecessary. Among the latest conjectures on how the universe came to be, as postulated by Stephen Hawking and others, is *the M-Theory*. This theory hypothesizes that there are other dimensions besides the four dimensions of length, width, height and time.

Hawking believes that a fifth dimension may exist and perhaps even more dimensions beyond that. If this is so, he postulates a fifth dimension existed before *The Big Bang*, which started the present universe. Now comes the significant part. Hawking states that before there was *The Big Bang*, everything was a true vacuum or *nothing*. There was nothing. However, something had to be there to start

everything. Hawking theorized there was an “*ekpyrosis*.” This is a Greek word meaning “*conflagration*” or “*consuming fire*” and refers to *an ancient Stoic cosmological model*. According to the model, the universe was created in a sudden burst of *fire*. Hence, the current universe evolved from that *initial fire*.

### A Consuming Fire

“*For our God is a consuming fire*” (Hebrews 12:29). This is the very same definition given by Hawking. In addition, Stephen Hawking said this consuming fire (*ekpyrosis*) always existed. He reservedly assigns *a First Cause* for everything, but did not describe *this ekpyrosis* as intelligent. God is The First Cause who is an all-intelligent *Being* and an all-consuming *fire*.

True science actually confirms the very existence of God. Other leading scientists agree with Hawking that *intelligence* was behind The Creation of The Universe. Allan Sandage, one of the world's leading astronomers, has declared that *The Big Bang* can be understood only as *a miracle*. Charles Townes, a Nobel-winning physicist and co-inventor of the Laser, said the discoveries of physics “*seem to reflect intelligence at work in natural law.*”

### Illogical Thinking

- 1) Something can start from nothing. Remember, *nothing can start from nothing.*
- 2) Evolution follows the laws of science. *They do not.*



- 3) Species can engender new species. *Can they really?*
- 4) To pursue evolution, given all the unresolved complexities confronting it, is too futile to make sense of it, let alone follow. *How very true.*

### Logical Thinking

- 1) The universe substantiates a design involving complex laws. Open your eyes and see the handiwork of God.
- 2) God always existed and needs no beginning. He is The First and The Last.
- 3) The universe, including all mankind, demands intelligence as its genesis rather than an accidental beginning from nothingness. It is what gives sense and meaning to life itself!

It takes logic to accept a First Cause by *The One* who had *Intelligence* and all *the power* to make it happen perfectly. Logic dictates logic. You are left with the choice of either pursuing the illogical approach – that the universe came about by accident – or that God created mankind and His universe with *a divine purpose*. Common sense demands the latter choice. There is no getting around it. God is *the creator of the universe* and of *all mankind*.

## Chapter 2

### GOD'S PUZZLE

*The Bible* is God's instructional book about vital concerns in life. It gives broad *overall* concepts. When a person learns about The First Cause and accepts this Great Power as The Maker of The Universe – it is time to follow all *the laws* He laid forth – and embrace His Word. Then you will discover *the purpose of life*. In this process, the so-called *puzzle of life* will come together.

Eventually, you will be on the road to understanding the complete story. But you must make the effort to read and study God's *word*. When you do, it will be amazing how the pieces of the puzzle begin to fall into place. These pieces create a wondrous mosaic for your life! Now consider what God said to Moses.

Exodus 3:14 <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God said that His name is, “<sup>14</sup>*I am that I am.*” God is saying, “*I always was, I am now, and I always will be: I am what I am*” (paraphrased). By this declaration, humans are confronted with a challenge to understand, intellectually, that God created everything. Why did God create everything? Why were humans born? To find the answers to these and other questions, you must find out who God is.

## Many Claims Are Made

Many religions claim to know *the truth*. The Judeo-Christian religion bases its belief on *The Old Testament*. Then, secular Christians base their belief on *The New Testament*, while generally ignoring *The Old Testament*. Then, there are other Christians who believe in both *The New* and *The Old Testaments*. Other religions such as Islam (with over a billion followers) believe in *The Qur'an* (Koran).

Of course, there are many other large religious faiths, including Buddhism, Hinduism and Taoism. From these sources, each individual will need to decide where to find *The True God*, His *purpose* and His *plan* for all *mankind*. Muslims believe that *Allah* is God – The One and Only True God. Biblically, in Hebrew, you find the word “*El*” (or Allah) means “*one God*.”

Muslims also believe that Mohammed is their Prophet. Mohammed believed in four books, three of which are found in *The Bible*. Some think that Muslims only believe in *The Koran*. However, they accept a total of four books and consider them to be of *divine origin*. These four books are: 1) *The Law of Moses* which is *The Book of Moses*, 2) *The Book of David* (the account of King David), 3) *The New Testament* about Jesus Christ (deeming it divine) and 4) *The Koran*.

*The Koran* tells Muslims that *the purpose* of God is to have His *believers* go into *the garden* – meaning *The Garden of Eden* (or *Paradise*). With the events on 9/11/01, this nation was made aware that *The Muslim faith* proclaims they do not fear death. When a Muslim dies, they believe that

they immediately go to *paradise*. However, this does not guide a person to *the true purpose* of God's *plan* here on earth. Something more is required.

Then, there are those who follow Buddha. He was born in 563 B.C. and eventually became known as *The Enlightened One* or *the bringer of knowledge*. Buddhists believe that to be human and worldly, is to be wicked. Buddha's teachings were intended to enlighten everyone with a variety of one-paragraph statements on how to avoid wickedness. Through meditation, Buddhists believe they can exist outside the physical reality of this world. By following these meditation rituals, Buddhists can get rid of all the negative or evil things that are part of the human experience. Their central purpose in life is to become *enlightened* or to finally reach what is called Nirvana. They felt they would become *one with the universe*.

### Why Are You Here?

But what about *the big plan* regarding why *you* are here? Who is *The True God* that these religions presume to introduce? What is His *plan*? Buddhism is a road map *without* a beginning and with only a vague destination. The claim is that God is *one* – but this concept of *oneness* is held in a different sense than that proposed by The West.

On the other hand, The Hindus believe in many, many gods. These gods guide them through the labyrinth of life. Teaching a person to speak less and listen more is accepted as a positive behavioral structure. But Hinduism provides only *a path*. You do not find a beginning or an end.

## Incomplete Understanding

These are only simple examples of the philosophies found in various religions and they all point to the incompleteness of their core beliefs. No matter what books you may read about the various religious beliefs, only *The Bible* gives you the complete understanding of God and His *purpose*. *The Bible* not only tells you who God is, what He is composed of, how He *looks* and what His *powers* are, but it also defines God's personality and character. Consequently, Christianity is a religion that is amazingly different from all the other alternatives.

*The Bible* tells you God's entire *plan* and *purpose* from the time when He created the universe all the way to the time when His *plan* will be completed. After looking at the different religions from a logical viewpoint, it should make more sense to go to the true source which tells all about God. It is *The Bible* that gives you the complete answer. When a person speaks with other individuals who are not familiar with *The Bible*, a common response is that *The Bible* is confusing to them. When I was inducted into the military service, it was near the end of World War II. It was then that I opened *The Bible* for the first time.

## While In The Navy

When in the service, the military placed me on a weather vessel to go out into The Pacific Ocean for 30 days at a time. This job consisted of tracking hurricanes! When bad weather was found, we could radio this vital information back to The United States. This data informed aircraft flight crews about where they could or could not fly.

So there have been many *hurricanes* in my life. They're no fun.

The Pacific Ocean is just what the word says – "*Pacific*" – meaning "*very peaceful*" and "*calm.*" Often our ship would be thousands of miles from land and as one looked out over the ocean, it was so calm that it resembled a sheet of glass. It looked like you could walk on that smooth glass-like surface. Then, at other times, it was so bad that everyone was seasick, including the salty captain. Everyone would sit on the deck trying to get all the fresh air they could breathe in. Some prearranged to have crates of oranges handy to suck on. I would get so sick and implore God, "*Please let me die.*" On the other hand, it was quite boring in between the hurricanes and the calm of the blue Pacific Ocean. So, I read everything in the ship's library. In time, at 30-day intervals, any sailor would run out of books. I found there was one book that hadn't been read. That is when I opened up a book called *The Bible*.

### Opening *The Bible*

Reading and studying *The Bible* in between frequent bouts of hurricane induced seasickness gave me the opportunity to attempt to understand *The Bible's meaning*. Most of it was confusing and it didn't make sense. Coming from a Christian background, I understood many things like the existence of God and that Jesus Christ was The Son of God. He sacrificed Himself to *save* all the people in the world. I understood all about that, but I never really comprehended where *this Bible* information was leading. I knew about God and Christ and the stories about Mo-

ses, Daniel and The Lion's Den. I knew about Noah in The Ark just as most young people do. Everyone usually knows about Noah and all the animals. But, not many know any more.

As I began to read *The Bible*, there were so many things in it that my church didn't believe in. This was perplexing. I was on the road to reading and studying *The Bible*. If you just read what *The Bible* says and believe exactly what it says, then it tells a story that is different from the one you've been told. Here is the story.

## The Biblical Puzzle

*The Bible* contains a puzzle. First of all, I must state God is *The First Cause*. Does God really reveal Himself in this Book and does He really unravel the puzzle? When you buy a puzzle box with all the pieces, you usually see the picture of the puzzle on the box. The box containing a *new Bible* usually has no picture on it. So, you would need to go through all the many pieces of information in order to know what the contents tell you (the big picture).

After over 50 years, I am still looking to see if one little piece will fit with another little piece. I've lived long enough now to recognize – and truly believe – that all of the pieces in this grand puzzle fit together into a wonderful mosaic. In other words, God's *puzzle* can be solved! This means that as you proceed to study *The Bible*, you will understand what God is doing and exactly why you are here.

II Timothy 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>But continue you in the things

which you have learned and have been assured of, knowing of whom you have learned them; <sup>15</sup>And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise to salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus.

As God reveals the overall picture, He gives instructions to those who want to understand His *puzzle*. As you study the individual pieces, you will come to know *where to anchor major pieces* and how they fit into the whole picture. The more you study God's *word*, the easier it will be for you to put the puzzle together. You will become so excited when you start to see the whole picture being assembled before your eyes. Do wonders ever cease?

### A Child Learns

My little granddaughter loves to put puzzles together. She brings the puzzle to me when she is finished. Her face will be glowing as a sense of triumph and accomplishment radiates from her face. She is absolutely happy and says, "Look!" Then I bait her by saying, "You put all those 50 pieces together?" She says, "Yes, Grandpa!" And that's exactly the way I feel when I find an important piece of the puzzle that completes another aspect of *the biblical picture*. In prayer, I am excited in the same way as my granddaughter. I thank God for each extra bud of knowledge that He allows me to learn. It is a joy. It is exhilarating and wonderful. God is wonderful! God gives you instructions about putting the puzzle together. The Apostle Paul gave Timothy, The Evangelist, important teachings by explaining how he should behave himself. Paul knew it wasn't going to be long before Timothy



would be required to rely totally on himself. Paul said, “*And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures which are able to make you wise to salvation*” (II Timothy 3:15). When you read *The Bible*, you should think of it from the standpoint that you are acquiring *wisdom*. Furthermore, this is “*wisdom to Salvation.*”

## The Holy Scriptures

Here in this text, you find that the first thing a person should learn is how to rightly divide the teachings of *The Bible*. Where it says “*holy scriptures,*” you must discern that “*Holy*” first signifies “*pure*” or “*unblemished.*” Make no mistake about that. These are *The Holy Scriptures which are able to make you wise* so you can learn about *Salvation*. This is the culmination of what God has *planned* for every person through *faith* which is “*Christ Jesus – In You.*” All *Scripture*, at that time, was found only in *The Old Testament*. *The New Testament* had not yet been completed. Realize that God not only looks to *The Old Testament* as *Holy Scripture* but also to *The New Testament*. Christians must come to understand that *The Holy Scriptures* consist of *The Old Testament* along with *The New Testament*. Paul told Timothy, “*Study to show yourself approved to God, a workman that need not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth*” (II Timothy 2:15). Nothing comes easy. You cannot study *The Bible* too often.

## Faith With Prayer And Study

*The Scriptures* tell you that *The Bible* is a puzzle and you must know how to separate or develop *The Word*. It is unwise to make an interpretation that does *not fit the con-*

*text.* Rather, you just need to find another piece of the puzzle. With prayer and study, in time, you will find it. Have *faith*. Hence, with time and study, you will be able to assemble the complete picture.

II Peter 3:16 As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction.

In reality, *The New Testament* tells you that this section of *the overall Bible* can also be called *The Holy Scriptures* (II Peter 3:16). Hence, the entire *Bible* consists of *The Old and New Testaments*. You see how all of Christ's words come from God, "*All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness*" (II Timothy 3:16). This means that *The Scriptures* will teach you about The True God who made the universe and how it was made. *The Bible* contains, in detail, God's *purpose* and *plan*. In short, *The Bible* explains how to piece the puzzle together.

## The Triangle Game

Once in a while, my family goes to a restaurant where they have a little triangle game with pegs in it to pass the time. Our granddaughter jumps one over the other. When you finally get down to two, you are quite intelligent. If you get down to one, you are close to being a genius! My little granddaughter will say, "*I have five left.*" I answer, "*Do it again.*" Then she's busy for another period of time. Later she'll say, "*I've got three.*" I encourage her, "*Oh that's*

*pretty good. Do it again.*” Well, lo and behold, once in a while, she gets down to two. Later, we found they have a little pamphlet that tells you what to do to get to one – *genius level*. *The Bible*, also, has instructions with a formula that will unscramble *The Puzzle of Life*.

Isaiah 28:9-10 <sup>9</sup>Whom shall he teach knowledge? And whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk and drawn from the breasts. <sup>10</sup>For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little and there a little.

God is a loving Father, an omnipotent being, who will never leave you in the dark. “*Whom shall he teach knowledge?*” Who is God? What is He like? What is He made of? How does He think? What is God’s personality? What is His character? What is He doing? Why are you here? All these can be found in this one statement, “*Whom shall he [God] teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand [learn] doctrine?*”

## Understanding Doctrine

“*Doctrine*” just means “*teaching*.” It is not a special ritual, although some groups do have ritualistic doctrines. This *Bible text* specifies how you can understand the knowledge about what God is doing on this earth. “*Them that are weaned from the milk and drawn from the breast.*” The first thing you must do to begin to understand *this biblical puzzle* is to become as a little child. “<sup>10</sup>*For precept must be upon precept.*” One thought is compared with another thought. Not only is this an idea-upon-idea concept, but

it is also a line-upon-line study. There is one line here and another line there. It is “*here a little and there a little.*” You must be innocent, eager to learn and have no preset ideas.

Why did God design it this way? It would have been much easier if He had written an outline-type of story. He could have explained everything by laying it out *simply* – just like an instructional manual. He could have said that He was God, what He's made of, what He looks like and what His *plan* is. He could have explained how life is to be lived. But God wanted all this to be *a puzzle*. Look at a couple of examples that illustrate *a biblical puzzle*. This may come as a shock as you put the pieces together.

Revelations 16:17-18 <sup>17</sup>And the seventh angel poured out his vial into the air; and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, It is done. <sup>18</sup>And there were voices and thunders and lightnings; and there was a great earthquake, such as was not since men were upon the earth, so mighty an earthquake and so great.

## A Mystical Book

*The Bible* is purposely mysterious and *The Book of Revelation* is known as *the mystical book*. In *Revelation*, “*seven seals*” and “*seven thunders*” are mentioned. It reveals a *tribulation* that has *the vial of wrath* from God at the very end. This could be quite confusing to the reader who sees the seventh angel pouring out his violence into the air! This is the time just before The Return of Jesus. “<sup>17</sup>*And the seventh angel poured out his vile into the air and became*

*a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne saying, It is done.*" Now the completion of The Plan of God is ready to take place. <sup>18</sup>*And there were voices and thunders and lightnings and there was a great earthquake."*

## The Great Earthquake

Who would think this major piece of the puzzle would be at the conclusion of *The Bible*? This isn't in *The Old Testament* – it is in *The New Testament*! You will find an important piece of the puzzle in Revelation 16 that connects with the beginning of *Genesis*! The connection is astounding! It tells you about a great earthquake such as <sup>16</sup>*was not since men were on the earth.*" This comes completely out of the blue. *The Bible* states that a tremendous earthquake will occur in The City of Jerusalem. One-third of *the city* will fall while only two-thirds of the city will remain.

A major feature of geography concerns The Great Rift Valley that goes down through Jerusalem into The Gulf of Aqaba and out to The Red Sea. From there, it reaches into Africa. Then it extends all the way down to South Africa and goes out into The Indian Ocean. How big and of what magnitude was the earthquake that created this great crack in the earth? This one may have been a 20 on The Richter Scale. Scientists say that with each increasing point on The Richter Scale, the force is comparable to a hundred thousand pounds of dynamite exploding. The force is horrendous. What in the world is the conclusion of *The New Testament* telling you? Astoundingly, it is telling you what happened in the very beginning before man appeared in the creation in *Genesis*.

Genesis 1:1-13 <sup>1</sup>In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2</sup>And the earth was without form and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. <sup>3</sup>And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. <sup>4</sup>And God saw the light, that it was good and God divided the light from the darkness. <sup>5</sup>And God called the light Day and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. <sup>6</sup>And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters and let it divide the waters from the waters. <sup>7</sup>And God made the firmament and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above firmament: and it was so. <sup>8</sup>And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. <sup>9</sup>And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together to one place and let the dry land appear: and it was so. <sup>10</sup>And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. <sup>11</sup>And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. <sup>12</sup>And the earth brought forth grass and herb yielding seed after his kind and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. <sup>13</sup>And the evening and the morning were the third day.

**In going back to the beginning, your goal is to fit the puzzle together. There are very simple statements in *The Book of Genesis* which are rather astounding.**

<sup>1</sup>In the beginning, God [God being the first cause] created the heaven and the earth. <sup>2</sup>And the earth was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.

Different theories exist in the various religious groups about these two verses. One is called *The Gap Theory*. From Genesis 1:1 to Genesis 1:2 there is a big gap of time – hence the name, *The Gap Theory*. But how can you prove it?

### Original State Of The World

The earth “*became void and without form,*” which in Hebrew is “*bohuw*” or “*tohuw*” (Genesis 1). These two words show how the earth was in the beginning. When God created it, it could have already been billions of years old. “<sup>2</sup>*And the earth.*” Was the earth created in six days? No, it was already in existence. You may have thought it was created in six days, but *Genesis* tells you that it was already there as a physical reality.

Was there an earthquake before Adam and Eve? Look at this little piece of the puzzle at the end of *The Bible* in *Revelation*. It tells you that there was never an earthquake like the one that is going to shake Jerusalem at the end-time. Well, if the earth was created in six days, what are you going to find? It was an earthquake shaking everything up. If you don't find an earthquake, what does that mean? It means that an earthquake happened before the six days of man's creation. “<sup>3</sup>*God said, Let there be light: and there was light.*” Then you find that He made day and

night and that was the end of the first day. Concerning the earthquake, there is no statement of an earthquake. “*God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters* [because the earth was already there].” He definitely did not create the earth in six days, because it existed long before the first six days. It was already in place, except there was water above the earth in the atmosphere.

### The First Light

You, also, find that God first caused the light to penetrate from above, which leads one to realize how the sun must have been in position. If the sun was not created until the fourth day, then where did this light come from? Well, there is an explanation. It could have come from God, because God is *light*. Keep that in mind for now, but continue to examine the concept of this earthquake. God said, “*Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters.*” Then, He made the heavens (the atmosphere). Still there is no earthquake to take into account. Then, dry land appears. Finally, “*earth brought forth grass and herb yielding seed...*<sup>12</sup>*And the evening and the morning were the third day.*”

Genesis 1:14-19 <sup>14</sup>And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs and for seasons and for days and years: <sup>15</sup>And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. <sup>16</sup>And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. <sup>17</sup>And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon



the earth. <sup>18</sup>And to rule over the day and over the night and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. <sup>19</sup>And the evening and the morning were the fourth day.

## The Fourth Day

During the fourth day, God points to the lights that were already in the heavens. So, He didn't make the sun and the moon on the fourth day. They were already there. All He did was adjust them. But for what *purpose*? It was for *seasons* and *times*. So where is the earthquake? There is no earthquake. Then, there is the sixth day, bringing forth the animals and man. There is no earthquake then, either. *The Book of Genesis* declares that before Adam and Eve were made, there was a great earthquake. Did that great earthquake need to happen before the sixth day? If you were going to take that little piece of the puzzle, where would you put it? You would have to put it between Genesis 1:1 and Genesis 1:2. Do you understand this? How many years do you think you would need to study in order to put all the pieces of the puzzle together? Most would agree that it would take a long time.

Genesis 15:15-16 <sup>15</sup>And you shall go to your fathers in peace; you shall be buried in a good old age. <sup>16</sup>But in the fourth generation they shall come hither again: for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.

## Faithfulness Of Abraham

Another piece of the puzzle shows Abraham being completely *faithful* to God by offering his own son, Isaac, as a

sacrifice (it was an example patterned by God's offering of Christ). For Abraham's faithfulness, God made *promises* to him. One promise was, "*Your seed is going to inherit this land.*" What comes to your mind? It could be, "*Those poor Amorites and Canaanites – why would God allow their land to be taken?*"

When Israel was ready to cross The Jordan River on their way to *the promised land*, God intended to kill all the inhabitants of the land because of their wickedness. Where does it say this? God tells Abraham, "<sup>15</sup>*And you shall go to your fathers in peace, you shall be buried in a good old age.*" Abraham was going to live out his life. He was to have a peaceful life and die very peaceably. He would just go to sleep. God told Abraham, "<sup>16</sup>*But in the fourth generation* [which was 400 years to 430 years later] *they shall come here again* [Abraham's seed will come back] *for the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full.*" God gave the land to Israel because The Canaanites kept filling it with *sin* and God said that situation *had to end*.

## Promised Land Rejects People

What chance do you have to understand all this? You learn of an earthquake at the end of *The Bible* (in *Revelation*) and it's actually telling you what happened in *Genesis*. The people lost their land because they were so violent, so sinful and so wicked. Unless you read and understand this part, you will never obtain the answer as to why God gave this land to The Children of Israel. You will think about those poor Amorites and conclude that perhaps God was not really fair. But, He is a very fair and just God. When people follow *pagan gods* and continue to

*pollute* the very place they live, then they will not be living in that land for very long.

Isaiah 28:11 For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people.

Follow God's instruction to understand the whole story. *"<sup>11</sup>For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people."* God purposely made *The Bible* confusing. He wants it to be a puzzle. To whom does He teach knowledge? How does a child approach learning? A child is always inquisitive, searching and always wanting to learn more. A child is without preset ideas. My little granddaughter thought human beings only died when they reached a hundred years old. She would say, *"Well, Grandpa, you have a long time to live."* So she must figure that I'm not near that hundred mark. Now, my mother recently died at the age of 97. Before she died, my granddaughter would say, *"Now great-grandma, she's getting closer to that hundred."* Then she says, *"I'm never going to die."* That is what she thought. So she had to be told *the truth*. Always tell everyone *the truth* because if you don't, you will pay a penalty down the road.

## Everyone Will Die

So I said, *"Well, Rachel, someday everyone will die."* Everyone. Then she said, *"Well..."* (I could tell that she got a cloud on her face). This factual statement affected her. She was quite disturbed. I said, *"But God is going to resurrect everyone."* Her face started to change. I said, *"Rachel, when you die, you just go to sleep...and God will eventually change everyone from being bad or evil."* *"Oh really!*

*Mommy and Grandpa and Grandma and Auntie?"* I said, "Yes." "Ohhhh," she sighed in relief. Everything was better after that. Now she accepts death. She was seven years old at the time and accepted the notion of death. She still asks me different questions about it. She will throw questions at me all the time. What is she doing? First, she is very innocent. She knows she doesn't know the answer. She has no preset ideas. My 21-year old grandson, Sean, asked the same questions when he was her age.

Mark 10:13-15 <sup>13</sup>And they brought young children to him, that he should touch them: and his disciples rebuked those that brought them. <sup>14</sup>But when Jesus saw it, he was much displeased and said to them. Suffer the little children to come to me and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>Verily I say to you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he shall not enter therein.

You have read how *The Old Testament* reveals the process of disclosing the puzzle. *The Bible* is understandable. Now, check *The New Testament* to find the requirements needed for you to perceive a clearer picture of *The Bible*. To whom will God teach knowledge? It is to those who are fed from the breast. What is Christ trying to tell you? You must become as little children. It is not easy to humble yourself.

## In The Navy

I started to read *The Bible* in the Navy at the age of 20. I couldn't understand it. I just saw stories with some differences from my prior religious belief. This background

contradicted what *The Bible* was saying to me. It wasn't until I was 30 that I began to understand and, therefore, I changed some of those preset ideas. I had an education with different degrees from universities and colleges. I had studied science, physics, astronomy, geology, cosmology and logic. So you can imagine how all these different teachings were contradicting and confusing. Christ said, "*Who did he go to preach to?*" He preached to *the poor*. He preached to *the unlearned*. They would listen because they had no preset ideas.

Whenever you get involved in a religion, you will begin to believe those specific religious teachings. The process of coming out of preconceived ideas is very hard. In your specific case, it may be education, religion or a self-pride from which you must extricate yourself. In all cases, you must first let go of *your ego*. Unless you become as a little child, you will not understand *The Bible*. You must come to the point where nothing you think is religiously *right* or *wrong*.

When you read in *Revelation* that a big earthquake took place before Adam and Eve, then that is what you believe. If it seems to contradict science, then that is what you still continue to believe. If *The Bible* tells you that the reason God kicked all the Canaanites out of the land was so He could give it to The Children of Abraham, then, you believe it. When you come to that place, then God will open your understanding to many more of His *truths*.

## Not Everyone Understands

At times, God doesn't seem fair. He could have made

everyone perfect and know everything in the beginning. Why does all this confusion exist? Why does *The Bible* call *life* a mystery?

Throughout the history of *The Bible*, you find that God only disclosed certain revelations to His Prophets. God waited until His Son was born to begin disclosing more of His *plans*. Why did God do that?

I Corinthians 15:21-26 <sup>21</sup>For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup>For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. <sup>23</sup>But every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. <sup>24</sup>Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. <sup>25</sup>For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

I Corinthians 15 is known as The Resurrection Chapter. God can cause certain people to stumble while reading His *word*. This is the time when God resurrects mankind from the dead. This is compared to a sleep from which everyone is awakened. “<sup>21</sup>*For since by man* [speaking of Christ] *came also the resurrection of the dead.* <sup>22</sup>*For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*” *Everyone will be resurrected.* No one is excluded.

“<sup>23</sup>*But every man in his own order.*” God is telling you that His *basic purpose* is to reproduce Himself by building a family with “*every man in his own order.*”

## Family Planning

God believes in *family planning*. God does not have children promiscuously. God doesn't go ahead and just have children whether He wants them or not. In fact, the story about *The Plan of God* reveals that He has already written your name in a book. This occurred long before you were born. That is true family planning! In fact, God knows every hair on your head. So it is, "<sup>23</sup>*Every man in his own order: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming.* <sup>24</sup>*Then comes the end,* [Revelation also reveals this] *when he shall have delivered up the Kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.* <sup>25</sup>*For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet.*"

## When The End Comes

The end will not take place until all the enemies of God are put down. God keeps all those enemies ignorant. They stumble because of this lack of knowledge. The very last enemy, *death*, shall finally be destroyed. God has put all things under Christ's feet when He said, "*all things are put under Him.*" In other words, Christ was accepted by The Father and everything was put under His jurisdiction until that final *end-time*.

Why doesn't God want everyone to know *the truth* from the beginning? Simply, everyone has his/her own *time sequence*. God works with each person to *save* each one at *the right time* (II Peter 3:9). Why would God want to be so discriminating? Even if one group is ignorant, eventually, He will let them know *The Whole Plan*.

Since *The Bible* is a puzzle, God has given you every single piece. However you will find the pieces come together only through *prayer* and *diligent study*. Christ said that He only revealed the truth to those who were *ready* to receive it according to God's *timetable* (Matthew 13:10-16).

Jesus said that if the others understood, then He would be required to heal them before it was time for them to be *saved*. God will work with each and every human being at the right time in order for them to be *saved*. God has thought of everything.

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

Many people argue over whether one book or another book should be a part of *The Bible*. They argue about the authorship of the different books. There is only one author – God. *The Bible* says, “<sup>16</sup>All scripture is given by *inspiration of God*.” Through prayer, reading and studying *The Bible*, you will come to find this book is written by scribes or reporters who, after much investigation and detective work, would write everything down because they were *inspired*.

## Who Could Invent This?

No man could dream this up. How could anyone tell you about an earthquake before Adam and Eve, unless He was actually there on location? No one could have known all this but God. One *being*, God, authors it all. This is the entire instruction book called *The Bible*!



II Peter 3:8-9 <sup>8</sup>But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. <sup>9</sup>The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.

When you don't understand, you think *The Bible* is confusing. Christian scholars always seem to memorize this verse, "*One day is with the Lord as a thousand years,*" along with the statement, "*9The Lord is not slack [slow] concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward.*" God is not prejudiced against any group of people. Some people want others to suffer in The Lake of Fire. Yet, in God's *plan*, He clearly states, "*Not willing that any should perish.*" He also says, "*Who will have all men to be saved*" (I Timothy 2:4). How can anyone get around these clear texts? These texts mean that it is God's intent to save everyone. You may pray The Lord's Prayer, "*Thy Kingdom come, Thy will be done.*" God can and will fulfill His *plan*. Do you want to fight God? It is God's *firm will* for all to be saved but only in their proper order.

## None Will Perish

Perhaps previous teachings hold you back from studying this part of the puzzle. It states that *God is not willing that any should perish*. Do you believe it? It may be hard to understand this in light of *biblical characters* like Judas or historical monsters like Hitler, Stalin, Osama Bin Laden and Saddam Hussein.

So you have two choices: 1) decide *The Bible* is not what it says or 2) choose to believe it. The choice is yours. If you come as a little child, His *word* will teach you. When God says, “<sup>9</sup>*Not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance,*” what happens to those people who go into *the fire*? Eventually, they will repent “*in his/her own order.*”

Why is God taking such a long time before He *returns*? Why is He so patient? God does not want anyone to be lost. God wants everyone to be *saved*. These revelations run throughout *The Whole Bible*.

Matthew 7:5-8 <sup>5</sup>You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eye. <sup>6</sup>Give not that which is holy to the dogs, neither cast you your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet and turn again and rend you. <sup>7</sup>Ask and it shall be given you; seek and you shall find; knock and it shall be opened to you: <sup>8</sup>For every one that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

As a little, innocent child with no preset ideas, you will understand His *word*. It's only confusing to understand when you have pre-conceived ideas.

<sup>5</sup>You hypocrite, first cast out the beam out of your own eye; and then shall you see clearly to cast out the mote out of your brother's eyes [talking about truth]. <sup>7</sup>Ask and it shall be given you; seek and you shall find; knock and it shall be opened to you: <sup>8</sup>For every one

that asks receives; and he that seeks finds; and to him that knocks it shall be opened.

In this text, Jesus talks about His *word*. When you understand the pieces of this big puzzle, you need to have a very innocent child-like approach and constantly ask Him to open *new truths* to you.

Hebrews 1:1-2 <sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.

This is vital instruction. Furthermore, you learn that, “<sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets.” The Prophets stopped prophesying about 450 years *before* The Time of Christ. That ended the reign of The Prophets. The Jews will confirm this for you.

God no longer spoke to everyone through His Prophets. Why was this? The answer begins with the statement that God, “<sup>2</sup>Has in these last days [The Last Days started with Christ] *spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.*” If Christ is the heir of all things, who tells you about it? Christ does, of course! What is The Work of God? The Work of God is to believe in Him whom God has sent (John 6:29). Become like a child by constantly praying to God and asking that it be done *through Christ*.

II Peter 3:15-16 <sup>15</sup>And account that the longsuffering

of our Lord is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given to him has written to you; <sup>16</sup>As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other scriptures, to their own destruction.

## Simple Answers

The answers are really quite simple. It is just a matter of putting the pieces together into the proper order. To do so, you must surrender to innocence. Open your mind to God! Peter states, “<sup>15</sup>*And account that the longsuffering of our Lord* [He is patient so everyone can be saved] *is salvation; even as our beloved brother Paul also according to the wisdom given to him has written to you; <sup>16</sup>As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood.*” From where does this verse come? Isaiah 28 states, “*Precept upon precept, line upon line.*” But who found it hard to understand?

It was hard for Christians to understand. Why? Because it contradicts what their ministers and teachers had taught them. Worldly Christian teachings are directly opposed to what *The Bible* reveals.

## Learning From God

It is *an evolutionary process* to learn from God. If you start as a child, “*line upon line*” and “*precept upon precept,*” then you begin to put little pieces of the puzzle together. When you start to see more of the puzzle, you

will begin to recognize the picture as a whole. Christians must understand this process. When you study, you might have a battle with yourself. You must become that child within yourself. You must continually ask God, in prayer, to help you see the pieces of His puzzle. Let Him know that you understand He has prepared a mystery and open your heart to let Him reveal this mystery so you can *solve the puzzle*. Ask Him in prayer and then read His answers in *The Bible* to your troubling questions. If not, you will stumble and you may fall.

Some Christian scholars wonder if they can really be sure Paul actually wrote this Epistle. Was it Mark or was it the secretary of Paul? When you study *The Bible*, you start to know who wrote *The Bible* by the style of the writing. God is *the author* of *The Bible* from *Genesis* to *Revelation*. It is all God's style. Arguing about who wrote this Epistle or that Epistle is not important, because God is *the author* over all. At times, a person may explain that they just don't believe *The Bible*. After being asked if they have ever read *The Bible*, a common answer is "No." *The Bible* calls these individuals "*unlearned*." "<sup>16</sup>*To their own destruction*." Paul's letters are called *Scripture*. *The New Testament* and *The Old Testament* are *Holy Scriptures*. *The entire Bible* from *Genesis* to *Revelation* is *God-breathed Scriptures*. It warrants that you read it, study it and pray you can understand it. Put as many pieces of the puzzle together so that you can get *the full true story*! God calls the puzzle of His *word* – The Mystery of God (Revelation 10:7)!

## Chapter 3

### WHO IS GOD?

Throughout the world, Christians believe in God. Many want to obey Him. So perhaps, you should know more about this God of *The Bible*. How does God appear? Does He have skin, bones and tissue? Is God old or is He young? Does God age in any way? What is God's personality? What can you learn about His character? What type of *being* is God? Finally, you need to know if He is a "He."

What makes God, the unique Almighty One? As you read *The Holy Scriptures*, you will find the genuine story about *The One and Only True God*. One of the best places to begin is with the story about a man who had an astonishing experience. This man had the opportunity to hear directly from God. Was it *good news* or *bad news*?

### Job Sees God

*The Book of Job* begins by telling about a man who lived in ancient times. The man's name was Job – and he served God with unusual diligence (Job 1:1-5). However, great calamity fell upon him. After a long period of trying to understand all the evil that came upon him, Job was addressed by God.

Job 38:3-4 <sup>3</sup>Gird up now your loins like a man; for I will demand of you and answer you me. <sup>4</sup>Where were

you when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare,  
if you have understanding.

**Job had some very hard lessons to learn. This encounter with The Holy One brought him to the greatest depth of *repentance* known to man. Job had to lose his family, his career and then be afflicted with sickness and excruciating pain. If that wasn't enough, Job's so-called friends tried to persuade him that all his problems were the result of hidden sins he committed. They told him he needed to repent. After a long period of suffering, Job was finally confronted directly by God who spoke with him out of the whirlwind (Job 38:1). Hence, Job became a captive listener about all the things God had created. God declared that when He made the oceans "*the waters would only go so far and no more*" (Job 38:11). God related how He rolled out the heavens as if it were a curtain – like The Big Bang (Job 38:31-35 and Isaiah 40:22).**

**In all this, it was a presentation to Job about how God had created the world. Job finally came to realize everything God was explaining to him. He was seeing more of the true perspective about *The Creator of this universe*. It was God's hand that had made everything – including the invisible laws that hold it all together.**

**Job 42:1-6 <sup>1</sup>Then Job answered the LORD and said <sup>2</sup>I know that you can do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from you. <sup>3</sup>Who is he that hides counsel without knowledge? Therefore have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not. <sup>4</sup>Hear, I beseech you and I will speak: I will demand of you and declare you to me. <sup>5</sup>I**

have heard of you by the hearing of the ear; but now mine eye sees you. <sup>6</sup>Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.

Job answered by saying, <sup>2</sup>*I know that you can do every thing and that no thought can be withholden from you.* <sup>3</sup>*Who is he that hides counsel without knowledge?* Job's problem was that he was *perfect* in his ways. He was depending upon his *own righteousness*.

### A Logical Perspective

In order to arrive at a logical conclusion about anything, a person must have all the facts. This must be done before any reasonable discussion or solution can take place. No one can give wise counsel or have meaningful discussions when they have only partial knowledge. Who is God? Wasn't that what Job argued about?

Job 42:3-4 <sup>3</sup>Therefore, have I uttered that I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not. <sup>4</sup>Hear, I beseech you and I will speak. I will demand of you and declare you to me.

Job then gave a summary of what he had learned from God. He said, <sup>5</sup>*I have heard of you by the hearing of the ear.* God talks to you through His *word, The Bible*. When you read God's *word*, it is God's *way* of teaching you. But what end must you finally come to? Job continues the above thought by stating, <sup>5</sup>*But now mine eye see you.* This is the conclusion of the matter. Job finally knew who and what God was and what He looked like. This was the hard lesson Job had to learn and why he



reported, “<sup>3</sup>*I understood not; things too wonderful for me, which I knew not.*”

One of the steps in discovering the wonderful aspects of God is by learning all you can about The One and Only True God. Job summarized his magnum experience. He admitted to knowing: 1) what God looks like, 2) understanding His *words*, 3) virtually seeing and hearing God, 4) knowing how He acts, 5) how He thinks and finally 6) knowing what God has done. “<sup>6</sup>*Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes.*” Notice particularly that Job said, “*I abhor myself.*” How many Christians have ever come to this state of mind? How many have come to the same depth of repentance? Job realized that his own *righteousness* was nothing – just as Paul understood that his own righteousness was like dung (Philippians 3:6-8).

## An Elderly God?

Most view God as an elderly man with long white hair, a wrinkled face and a white beard. They often envision this God as one who sits on a chair with His hand on a globe. This picture makes God look very old. He almost seems frightening to behold. God can do such miraculous works, which are so powerful that He can cause mankind to be in the image of Himself. What are your thoughts about God's appearance? Compare your own impressions with that of David's concept of God.

Psalm 27:1-4 <sup>1</sup>The LORD is my light and my salvation; whom shall I fear? the LORD is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid? <sup>2</sup>When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my

flesh, they stumbled and fell. <sup>3</sup>Though a host should encamp against me, my heart shall not fear: though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident. <sup>4</sup>One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life, to behold the beauty of the LORD and to inquire in his temple.

David explains why you should know God. It is because, “*<sup>1</sup>The LORD is my light and my salvation.*” David acknowledges this thought from the very beginning. As you study, you will come to understand why David was a man after God’s own heart. You will see how freely David opens his own heart to God. David continued, “*<sup>1</sup>whom shall I fear? Of whom shall I be afraid?*” He wasn’t afraid of God. “*The LORD is the strength of my life.*” In contrast, man has vulnerabilities by just existing in the human flesh with all its failings.

So, as with David, when you learn more about God, those fears will diminish. David said, “*Of whom shall I be afraid? <sup>2</sup>When the wicked, even mine enemies and my foes, came upon me to eat up my flesh, they stumbled and fell* [God was there for him]. *<sup>3</sup>Though a host,* [talking about an army] *should encamp against me.*” Have you ever heard a knock on the door in the middle of the night? You are awakened from a sound sleep and can’t be sure what caused the noise? Are you a bit fearful? Not David. Everyone should read about why David was the vital instrument used to take Goliath down. David said, “*My heart shall not fear; though war should rise against me, in this will I be confident* [David was confident]. *<sup>4</sup>One thing have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after.*” This is the ultimate

objective that David pursued. It was his goal in life. It is stated as, “*That I may dwell in the house of the LORD all the days of my life.*” And to do what? The answer is, “*To behold the beauty of the LORD. And to enquire in his temple.*” David is telling you that God is beautiful!

## God Is Beautiful

When checking a Hebrew word used in this passage, you will find that *the connotation* is about God *being beautiful*. This translates into God being *delightfully pleasant*. When you look at God, He is delightfully pleasant. He is not like the pictures you have seen with long white hair, a long beard, wrinkled face and those probing eyes. Instead, David said, “*God looked handsome.*” But in reality, God is beyond description.

Words are just too limiting – no matter what language might be employed. You cannot reduce God’s wonder and splendor into mere words. When you strive to know God, He will, in time, reveal to you His *overall plans*. Your goal should be to obtain knowledge and then you will understand *The Real Purpose of Life*. As you learn about God, you will know who God is.

I Corinthians 13:11-13 <sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known. <sup>13</sup>And now abides faith, hope, charity, these three; but the greatest of these is charity.

The Christian world defines I Corinthians 13 as *The Love Chapter*. It tells you about *real love*. However, it also reveals something far more intricate. The Apostle Paul tells about *the different gifts* you should seek: *Faith, Hope* and *Love* (charity). The translation in The King James Version uses the word *charity* instead of *love* because there are different types of love. In Greek, there is an intellectual love – which is *agàpè*. This is not just an emotional love, but rather it is an intellectual love which is *a giving type of love*. It is a charitable act which is a continuous outgoing type of love. It should always be your concern for the other individual.

## Discerning God

In reference to knowing who God is and what He looks like, you should discern what this definition means in relationship to yourself. “<sup>11</sup>*When I was a child* [speaking about these gifts], *I spoke as a child. I understood as a child.*” This sounds somewhat like Job, doesn’t it? It was as if Job was saying, “*Why should I counsel? I didn’t have knowledge.*” He just didn’t have the correct factors in place. Job didn’t have enough *truth* to speak sensibly. But on the other hand, this is what Paul said.

<sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly.

In other words, you will only see in *shadows*. You will only know *part of the truth*. No one can perceive completely or have full understanding. Being human is a handicap on

*the eventual ability to see the truth about spiritual knowledge more perfectly.*

**You will only see parts, such as with The Holy Days and The Sabbath which were only *shadows* of things to come. What God reveals about Himself through His Holy Word will not be a total picture because to fully know Him is *unreachable*. “<sup>12</sup>*For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then* [when you are changed, you will see Him] *face to face.*” When you are changed, you will be like God and His Son. When you look at God (and not an angel), you will see completely. To know *the whole process of Salvation*, which comes only through Jesus Christ, you will know The Father. The more you come to learn of The Father, the more you grow in knowledge and understanding. When you know what God is doing and why He is doing it, you will see that it was the only possible way He could *achieve* His goals. *This gift of love, the ultimate gift from God, is when you see Him face-to-face.***

**John 4:9-10** <sup>9</sup>Then said the woman of Samaria to him, How is it that you, being a Jew, ask drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. <sup>10</sup>Jesus answered and said to her, If you knew the gift of God and who it is that said to you, Give me to drink; you would have asked of him and he would have given you living water.

## **Woman At The Well**

**A most beautiful account is told when the woman from Samaria came to the well and Christ asked her for water. This episode became the basis for a powerful lesson.**

**John 4:19-24** <sup>19</sup>The woman said to him, Sir, I perceive that you are a prophet. <sup>20</sup>Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. <sup>21</sup>Jesus said to her, Woman, believe me, the hour comes, when you shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. <sup>22</sup>You worship you know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. <sup>23</sup>But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. <sup>24</sup>God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

The Disciples were shocked to see Jesus speaking to a Samaritan woman. He said, <sup>10</sup>*I'm going to give you water of which you will never thirst*" (paraphrased). He tells her that He is Christ and that He will be able to give her *living waters*. The Jews were given The Oracles (the truth) of God. They had been directed to worship in *the temple* where God resided. Then Jesus described an alternative. He said, <sup>23</sup>*But the hour comes and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth.*"

## Worship Without A Temple

After the destruction of *the temple*, no physical place remained for The Christians to meet. So now, Jesus Christ resides in every converted Christian person, *"For the Father seeks such to worship him* [those who worship in Spirit] <sup>24</sup>*God, is a Spirit.*" *Spirit* is a substance of which God is composed. On the other hand, mankind has skin and bones. Humans can be burned and end up as dust or ash.

You cannot be resurrected as skin and bones. To become a part of The Family of God, you must be *resurrected as a spirit*.

The word for “*spirit*” in the original Greek language of *The New Testament* is “*pneuma*.” The word for “*spirit*” in *The Old Testament* is “*ruah*.” Both words mean “*wind*” or “*a huge blast of wind*” – “*as powerful as a tornado*.” Wind cannot be seen. You can only see what it can do and what it whips up within itself. You can see all the debris that it carries but never the wind itself. You feel its impact (energy) and you can see the damage it does. You know about the force of the wind. So this force compares with the construction of God’s *energy*. It is *energy* that is constantly on the move. It is a self-perpetuating dynamic. *God is self-perpetuating energy* with no mass or matter. You can learn how energy works and how it functions within *His body*. God is made of this power-field that is propelled like the wind.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

*The invisible things of God* are perceived by the elements that He has created. God tells you that He *is like the wind*. This electrical energy can be produced by the wind. Man-made windmills can create this form of energy. As a result, God’s energy creates this electricity, through which you can more perfectly perceive what His *body* is like. He can be like lightning along with the power of fierce blowing winds. God is a combination of all these electromag-

netic forces. Yet, these forces are just a very small part of the composition of God's body.

John 14:8-10 <sup>8</sup>Philip said to him, Lord, show us the Father and it will suffice us. <sup>9</sup>Jesus said to him, Have I been so long time with you and yet have you not known me, Philip? He that has seen me has seen the Father; and how say you then, show us the Father? <sup>10</sup>Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? the words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, He does the works.

Look at those vital words. “*8Show us the Father and it will suffice us.*” They wanted to see God. They would have been satisfied if they could see what God looked like. In response, Jesus said the following.

<sup>9</sup>Have I been so long time with you and yet have you not known me, Philip? He that has seen me has seen the Father. And how say you then, show us the Father?

Jesus Christ was in the flesh and telling Philip that God looks like Christ, Himself. In other words, He *looks exactly as a human being would appear*. Christ continued, “*9He that has seen me has seen the Father.*” He was not made of the substance of which Christ was made. Christ was in the flesh while still on this earth.

## Compared To The Wind

God is made of wind that consists of great energy. Christ's height was probably somewhere between 5' 7" and 6' 5." Perhaps within that parameter is the height of God, The



Father. He has eyes, ears, mouth, legs, thighs and everything that you have. Jesus said, “*9He that has seen me has seen the Father.*” It is very plain in *The New Testament* that God looks like a man but is made of *spirit* (or wind). Understand that wind is real even though it cannot be seen. Did you ever see a tornado or a tsunami? Have you ever been in a windstorm or a hurricane? I can tell you from chasing hurricanes during my term of service, that the power of God is alive in the wind and, indeed, in all weather.

Think of *The Scriptures* where God told Job that God is as stated, “*I’m in the frost. Even in the frost of winter, I’m in that.*” God made the frost, also. God is *perpetual energy*. If God were not constantly in the process of keeping the universe going, it would collapse. Consequently, everything would be gone. So God’s *electromagnetic energy* (spirit) keeps everything going. Jesus said, “*10Believe you not that I am in the Father and the Father in me? The words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, he does the works.*”

Jesus Christ, Himself, plainly tells you that He and The Father look the same. God looks like a human being. Although, He is made of *Spirit*, so there is much more.

I John 1:1-5 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life; <sup>2</sup>(For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we

have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you, that your joy may be full. <sup>5</sup>This then is the message which we have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light and in him is no darkness at all.

As the student of *The Bible* places “*line upon line and precept upon precept*” (Isaiah 28:10, 13) then all the unknown Mysteries of God will be pieced together, so, as far as is humanly possible, you can still see *the complete picture* of the puzzle. It sounds almost sacrilegious, doesn’t it? Yet God has laid it all out for you, so that, *in truth*, you will see what God is and what He looks like.

## From The Beginning

Where and when is the beginning? What took place at that time? There is a record of importance.

1 John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon and our hands have handled, of the Word of life [speaking of Christ]; <sup>2</sup> (For the life was manifested and we have seen it and bear witness and show to you that eternal life, which was with the Father and was manifested to us;) <sup>3</sup>That which we have seen and heard declare we to you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father and with his Son Jesus Christ. <sup>4</sup>And these things write we to you that your joy may be full.

The Apostle John was reporting that he saw Jesus in the correct context along with all the other Apostles who lived with Jesus. With the knowledge of this information, John is reporting that by seeing Christ (who was like The Father), you will experience joy, “*5This then is the message, which you have heard of him and declared to you.*”

## God Is Light

*Light is the second substance of God, “That God is Light”* (I John 1:5). The two scientific elements of which God is composed are: 1) *wind* and 2) *light*. All these electromagnetic forces, light, gamma rays, ultra violet rays and nuclear forces which science has discovered, are in God and emanate from Him. Long before scientists discovered this, God told you that all those *forces* are *in* God. Only at this time has science come to the place where it finally realizes that the origin of all these energy fields is from *light*. The most prevalent material of God's composition is *light!* *Light* has power.

In science, researchers have found that light comes in little packages called *photons*. The energy in these photons of light is filled with little waves. The higher the frequency in the wave, the faster the wave travels and therefore, the greater amount of energy. The stronger the photons, the more energy is produced. God is composed of *light energy*. Einstein was right.  $E=MC^2$ . Energy (which is what God is) equals mass times the speed of light squared. Now you know what God is made of!

He is made of *light* and He is made of *spirit*. Isn't it ironic that when you start to look at His physical makeup, you

will see everything about Him radiates a *powerful light*? Even beyond these little photons, scientists are finding little squiggly things or *strings*.

The latest news in science is about The String Theory. These are elements that are composed of energy. You can look at a light bulb in a room and it will illuminate. You probably don't think of *light as a force*. But what is electricity? Electricity is energy. So God is composed of a great amount of energy. What type of energy is this? To behold God is a *delightfully pleasant* experience. God is handsome with no wrinkles, no long white hair or beard. God exudes a pleasant light or radiance.

## Visions Of Daniel

Daniel 7:1 In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream and told the sum of the matters.

Daniel 7:9 I beheld till the thrones were cast down and the Ancient of days did sit, whose garment was white as snow and the hair of his head like the pure wool: his throne was like the fiery flame and his wheels as burning fire.

To solidify another part of the puzzle found in *The Old Testament*, you should recognize that Daniel received the same kind of information John had received in *The New Testament*. Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, was given a dream about a massive image (Daniel 2:31-36). Daniel explains to the king, “*This image and the interpreta-*

*tion, he says is you. You are the head of this image*" (Daniel 2:37). The Gentile *image* will exist until Christ destroys it when He *returns*.

This image represents *the four kingdoms* that will exist until The Return of Christ. To get a proper perspective about the background of this prophecy, read Daniel 7:1, "<sup>1</sup>*In the first year of Belshazzar, king of Babylon, Daniel had a dream and visions of his head upon his bed: then he wrote of the dream and told the sum of the matters.*"

Adding to this, the angel reveals in Daniel 7:9 about the dream concerning the animals that would rule, "<sup>9</sup>*I beheld till the thrones were cast down.*" All this takes place after the earthly empires have been completed and *the kingdoms of the world* are replaced by God's kingdom. "<sup>9</sup>*The thrones were cast down and the Ancient of days did sit.*" This is the time of The Great Judgment Day.

## Ancient Of Days

With these texts, you begin to have a description of God and how old He is. God is *ancient*! *The Bible* does not say that God is old but rather declares that He is *ancient*. The Hebrew word "*ancient*" refers to "*eons*" or "*ages*." With God, there is no time. The only way you can note time is when you have something to measure time with. God created the sun, moon and stars as *instruments of time measurement*. If God were old, it would mean that He was once young. And that would imply that He has aged over time. Instead, you are told that God is *ancient*.

If God had been young once in the past and then became

old, that would subject God to *the restriction of time*. Instead, He is just *ancient*. Notice how *The Bible* refers to time periods as “*aonion*” or “*age lasting*.” In fact, many religions identify *a time span* that occurs in *an age-period* as a dispensation. God has different ages in which to accomplish different things. That is God’s *dispensation*. At one age, He created the heaven and the earth. In another age, He made it habitable for Adam and Eve. God is *ancient* because He *always has been*, is *today* and *always will be forever and ever*. There is no limiting of God in any manner.

## Garments Of Light

What type of clothing do you think God wears? God does not run around like the heroes in today’s movies bare-chested with disgusting, sweaty, oily skin. God appears to be very modest. He is so modest that He is clothed down to His feet.

His clothing is *white as snow*. It is *white* for a specific reason. You are seeing God who looks like a human being. As Christ said, “*Just as he was*.” He is made of *light* and composed of *spirit*. God has been around forever and, now, you find that He wears garments. These are like garments of light. The text says, “*And his garment was white as snow and the hair of his head was like pure wool*.” Does this mean that God has curly or wavy hair?

When a person looks at a herd of sheep and notices their hair, it is wavy isn’t it? God’s hair could possibly be curly or wavy. *The Scriptures* confirm it. God just naturally has hair that appears like wool. You now have two more

descriptions about how God looks. Is there anything missing? Notice, there is no mention of a beard. What comes out from God's presence? Are there fiery flames?

God is made of *spirit, light and energy*. If you were in front of Him with His woolly hair, there would be all kinds of flames emanating from Him. Daniel 7 says, “*His throne was like the fiery flame and his wheels as burning fire.*” Notice, how His throne, also, has wheels as burning fire.

Ezekiel 1:4-7 <sup>4</sup>And I looked and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud and a fire infolding itself and a brightness was about it and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire. <sup>5</sup>Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. <sup>6</sup>And every one had four faces and every one had four wings. <sup>7</sup>And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass.

## Biblical UFO's

Continuing with *the Ezekiel text*, there is a certain type of transporting device for God. Some might even describe the device as an unidentified flying object (UFO). Carefully examine the following account.

Ezekiel 1:27-28 <sup>27</sup>And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward and from the appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as

it were the appearance of fire and it had brightness round about. <sup>28</sup>As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face and I heard a voice of one that spoke.

In Ezekiel 1, you read about *The Bible's* UFOs. A lot of people get into trouble over UFOs. They write books, start clubs, open tourist areas and start religions with various UFO beliefs. People spend their time looking for aliens. Thousands of years ago, God wrote about *a type of UFO*. Ezekiel was in captivity in Babylon. He disclosed a personal vision about a prophecy that was, yet, to occur. Ezekiel said, “*4And I looked and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north.*” What is God like? Could it be like a blast – such as a tornado? Notice the words, “*A great cloud and a fire infolding itself.*”

In this cloud, there was something so energetic that it had hot flames. It was fire almost like an atomic blast of energy, “*And a brightness was about it and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire.*” So, God looks human-like. He is composed of energy (wind and light) and glowing with an amber color. Many different colors exude from the brilliance that is radiated by God. This is confirmed in Greek and Hebrew. Some definitions do not specify the exact colors, but God is composed of over 20 different jewel tones. To look upon God, it would appear as if you are looking upon magnificent glowing jewels. This is an entirely different picture than most have of God. They see amber and “*5out of the*



*midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures.”* This was their appearance. They had the likeness of a man. Then, the passage describes four cherubim. The cherubim have four wings and are part of a wheel within a wheel.

According to some interpretations of a UFO, it may have a wheel and then a wheel within that wheel. This may appear like a supernatural gyroscope. Ezekiel 1:27 states, “*27 I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of fire round about within it, from the appearance of his loins even upward.*” From God’s loins upward, the color you see is amber. “*His loins upward*” means from roughly about His thighs upward. This is the *amber color* exuding from God. In the color spectrum (the rainbow), white is not considered to be a color since all the colors of the rainbow contain white.

So, the greater the intensity of something, a greater degree of *energy, heat or light* exists. Consequently, it will be *brighter or more white* will be in it. When the color spectrum opens up as *a rainbow*, the next levels following *white* are *the blues* and *the violets*. As the color spectrum unfolds and the energy becomes less, it goes into the *reds, oranges* and *yellows* then into *the bronzes*.

## The Face Of God

You will find that the face of God exudes the greatest amount of energy. From His head and, especially, from His face, it is *this whiteness* rushing upward from His thighs into the blue hue. It compares to a diamond that contains a sparkle of blue shimmering within. Imagine bumping

into *a being* that looks this radiant. It may be shocking for some to realize that God has disclosed so much about Himself. “*The appearance of his loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of fire and it had brightness round about*” (Ezekiel 1:27). In other words, such a degree of energy radiates from His *body*, that the whole image is entirely “a wondrous brightness.” It is no wonder that David said, “*All I want to do is sit in the temple of God and look at his beauty.*”

There is another surprise about God’s appearance. Remember that from the visible and invisible things of God, you can see His *creation*. Those colors are so magnificent, so overpowering and so delightful that all you would want to do is to stare at Him in amazement. God is that awesome, that wonderful and that handsome. Consider also, “<sup>28</sup>*the appearance of the bow.*” The brightness exuding from Him is like the appearance of the rainbow in the cloud following a day of rain. What type of brightness surrounds God? It is *the rainbow* from God’s light energy.

God’s *glory* radiates *a rainbow*! Is it any wonder that in Noah’s day, God could not have given a better promise than to say He would never again flood the earth? He was giving His Covenant of The Rainbow in the heavens. *This promise* comes straight from God and directly from His *throne*. When you behold God and see the brightness which radiates from him, you see *blue, violet, orange, red* and *yellow* – all the brilliant hues with the magnificent colors of the rainbow coming from God.

If you remember the movie *The Wizard of Oz*, there was a

wizard who lived in the enchanted Land of Oz. When they first showed the wizard's throne, it displayed the rainbow. Do you remember the song, "*Somewhere Over The Rainbow?*" The wizard (the man-made *god*) in the movie was supposed to be beaming with the brightness and glorious emerald colors of the rainbow. "<sup>28</sup>*So was the appearance of the brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the glory of the LORD*" (Ezekiel). In *The Bible*, how many times do you read, "*The Glory of The LORD?*" In Hebrew, they call it "*shekinah*."

## The Glory Of God

In the days before *the temple* was destroyed, The Levitical Priesthood said they heard a voice echoing, "*It's going; it's going.*" This was about *the shekinah* or The Glory of God (all God's brilliance and power) that was going away. Literally, *The Glory* (the brilliance and power) was leaving *the temple*. When the people entered *the temple* before it was destroyed, God's very presence had been there as His Spirit, His Glory or *shekinah*. The "*Glory of The LORD*" means "*copious splendor*" or "*all of God's power.*"

When *The Bible* speaks of The Glory of The LORD, it is talking about a Supreme Being. When something is copious, it is *saturated* or *saturated splendor*. It is saturated with a multitude of jewels. That is The Glory of The LORD. David knew this and Job finally came to see it. It is now your turn to know The Glory of The LORD. By going before God in prayer, you will realize the magnificence of God. It is mind-boggling.

Exodus 3:11-14 <sup>11</sup>And Moses said to God, Who am I,

that I should go to Pharaoh and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? <sup>12</sup>And He said, Certainly I will be with you; and this shall be a token to you, that I have sent you: When you have brought forth the people out of Egypt, you shall serve God upon this mountain. <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you and they shall say to me, What is his name? What shall I say to them? <sup>14</sup>And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and He said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

God is called by a particular name. But remember, God has *many names*. Some are titles telling what He is or what He is doing at a particular time. But God has a specific name which is difficult to pronounce. In fact, The Israelites were never permitted to pronounce it. This was because that name was extremely Holy. Capitalizing on this fact, read the account about the time when Moses was instructed by God to take the children of Israel out of Egypt.

Exodus 3:11-13 <sup>11</sup>And Moses said to God, Who am I, that I should go to Pharaoh and that I should bring forth the children of Israel out of Egypt? <sup>12</sup>And He said, Certainly I will be with you and this shall be a token to you, that I have sent you: When you have brought forth the people out of Egypt, you shall serve God upon this mountain. <sup>13</sup>And Moses said to God, Behold, when I come to the children of Israel and shall say to them, The God of your fathers has sent me to you.

So they knew The God of The Fathers. What they did not know was His name. The name had been revealed to Moses at the burning bush, “<sup>13</sup>*The God of your fathers has sent me to you; and they shall surely say to me. What is his name? What shall I say to them?* <sup>14</sup>*And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM*” (Exodus 3:13-14).

### Great Name Of YHVH

In Hebrew, only the consonants are used to indicate The Heavenly Father's name (*YHWH* by some accounts, *JHVH* by others and still others *YHVH*). These four letters are called The Tetragrammaton. The ancient Hebrew had *no vowels*. The scribes or copyists used diacritical marks just above or below the letters to indicate the vowels. Experts in Jewish *law* elected to hide this *fourfold name* to ensure it would not be blasphemed. When the four letters of The Tetragrammaton appeared in the text, scribes would point to it and substitute vowels for the word “*adonai*” in Hebrew (literally, “*lord*”) which was in turn read “*adonai*” rather than *the sacred name “Yahweh.”* In Hebrew, “*I AM THAT I AM,*” states exactly what God actually is. God said, “*You shall say to the children of Israel, ‘I AM’ has sent me to you.*” This name means “*I am the existing one.*” In Hebrew it means *the “existing one”* or *the “only existing one.”*

This ties in with The Ancient of Days meaning that God always existed. He exists today and He always will exist. However, the name means much more. It means “*The One who always exists.*” In other words, He is “*self-life.*” He consists of *perpetual energy*. God needs nothing outside of Himself. He is everything that is. This has a deeper

meaning than just saying, “*You’re a God*” or even the more emphatic, “*You are The God.*” You could use “*Elohim,*” which is plural or *more than one*, when speaking universally. This text is speaking about all of His *Godliness*. It is opposed to, “*I alone as God am the existing one,*” or when he says “*El Shaddai, The Almighty One.*” Those are titles, but YHWH (or JHVH) is His name. His name can never apply to anything or any other *being* because God is The Only Existing One.

Exodus 20:1-4 <sup>1</sup>And God spoke all these words, saying,  
<sup>2</sup>I am the LORD your God, which have brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.  
<sup>3</sup>You shall have no other gods before me. <sup>4</sup>You shall not make to you any graven image or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above or that is in the earth beneath or that is in the water under the earth.

Why does God tell you in The Second Commandment “*not to make any images even of his likeness?*”

## Images Of God?

Think about the pictures depicting Christ, along with the idols, icons, statues or other images that you see representing God or His Son. It is unbelievable. How could anyone ever think of making an image of God? It is unthinkable. It is impossible.

God instructs His people not to make images because it would only be a lie. The Second Commandment is powerful – “*You shall make no images of me.*” It should not and cannot be done. When artists try to depict a like-

ness, others begin to worship those false images. A person might say, “*I know that is not God but it makes me think about God.*” No, it doesn’t. It doesn’t make anyone think about God, because God doesn’t look anything like those renditions. How powerful that commandment is when you know its *true* meaning. Now you understand why that commandment has been placed there for you and all Christians to obey. It is easier to understand The First Commandment when a person says there is *One God* and only *One God*. He is The Only Existing One. He is The One and Only One! God is One. *The Book of Job* and *Proverbs* tell you that when God made a decree, all He had to do was to stretch the heavens out as a curtain. That motion in the heavens could have been The Big Bang. It should, now, be more significant to you. If God didn’t exist, what would happen to the universe? It would be gone. God upholds the whole universe, including everything and everyone in it.

Genesis 5:1-2 <sup>1</sup>This is the book of the generations of Adam. In the day that God created man, in the likeness of God made he him; <sup>2</sup>Male and female created he them; and blessed them and called their name Adam, in the day when they were created.

As you read earlier, God looks like a human being. Genesis 1 and Genesis 5 tell you how He made you *in His image*.

## Male And Female

When examining *The Book of Genesis*, you can discern why man and woman become one flesh. Genesis 5 states, “<sup>2</sup>*Male and female created he them in His image.*” What

does that mean? Even though God is *a male being*, the DNA of both the female and the male are in Him. The word DNA or genes is used in an attempt to explain this. Many times women think they are left out of the equation. However, they are not overlooked and are as much a part of God as men. *The light substance* that comprises God is used to compose both male and female. Concerning God's creative work, "*And he called their name Adam.*" Why did Eve take Adam's name and not have her own name? This is because God is *The Existing One* and He is both male and female, all in one, with all humans belonging to '*I Am.*'

Adam was a symbol or a figure of Christ. Men are to be one flesh with their wives. That is the reason why men and women marry: in order to become *one flesh*. God is *One*. Do you realize that the DNA of the female, as well as the male, is in God? Furthermore, the word "*Elohim,*" or "*God's leading you,*" is an additional piece of the puzzle for you to assemble. It is a beautiful picture with a wonderful message for all mankind.

I John 1:5 This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light and in him is no darkness at all.

Now compare the extremes: 1) what God is and 2) what God isn't. "*This then is the message which you have heard of him and declare to you, that God is light. And in Him is no darkness at all.*" You may have seen little gadgets that spin when they are put in the sunlight. This is called a radiometer. How can sunlight make that gadget spin? The sun is energy and when it hits the spindle (little



white squares) light is reflected. This provides a certain degree of *push*. But there are also little black squares on the spindle and those black squares *absorb the light*. The white squares move away from the light but not the black squares. Similarly, in God, *there is no darkness*. That is why there are black holes. Black holes build up energy that can actually swallow up the light. God has no darkness. He is nothing but *light* and only *light*.

## Two Beings

You are presented with *two major beings* in *The Bible*. One *being* is The Son of The Other. They both look alike. They are both of the same '*I Am*' family. Adam was of that family because he and his wife were *one*. The Son and The Father are *One* exactly as Adam and Eve were *One*.

Revelation 1:8 I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, said the Lord, which is and which was and which is to come, the Almighty.

Revelation 1:12-14 <sup>12</sup>And I turned to see the voice that spoke with me. And being turned, I saw seven golden candlesticks; <sup>13</sup>And in the midst of the seven candlesticks one like to the Son of man, clothed with a garment down to the foot and girt about the paps with a golden girdle. <sup>14</sup>His head and his hairs were white like wool, as white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire

All this becomes the basis for the message which follows, "*I am the Alpha and the Omega, the beginning and the ending, said the Lord, which is and which was and which is*

*to come, the Almighty*” (Revelation 1:8). In other words, He is what *the beginning* and *the ending* are supposed to be. So whether it is: 1) in the beginning or 2) at the end, you are going to see what He is like. “<sup>12</sup>*And I turned to see the voice* [The Apostle John turned to see this voice that spoke to him] *and being turned I saw seven golden candlesticks. And in the midst of the seven candlesticks, one like to the Son of man.*” Who is this in the middle of the golden candlesticks? Is it Jesus Christ? You will now see what Christ looks like after *His resurrection*. He is “<sup>13</sup>*clothed with a garment down to the foot.*” He is fully clothed in a modest manner and wears a belt. “*And girt about the paps with a golden girdle.*” Notice it’s a golden girdle! He must believe in quality. You have already proven that His hair was like wool. But here you see that “<sup>14</sup>*his head and his hairs were white like wool.*” So His hair looks like wool and it’s of a white color. Why is it white?

## White Hair

The color *white* carries the whole color spectrum. “*As white as snow; and his eyes were as a flame of fire.*” Energy is coming from God’s eyes. If you looked into His eyes, you would see burning fire like lasers. It would be at an intense temperature that is unknown to man. His hair is white – but it is not long hair. His face is white (with no beard). There is a time for a man to have long hair – when he is under a vow. God does not live under a vow, so He does not need long hair. God doesn’t break His own *Laws*. Women are directed to have long hair because they are under the authority of their husbands. Men should not have long hair because they should follow God’s admonition to look like Him.

**I Corinthians 11:7-15** <sup>7</sup>For a man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man. <sup>8</sup>For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man. <sup>9</sup>Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man. <sup>10</sup>For this cause ought the woman to have power on her head because of the angels. <sup>11</sup>Nevertheless neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man, in the Lord. <sup>12</sup>For as the woman is of the man, even so is the man also by the woman; but all things of God. <sup>13</sup>Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray to God uncovered? <sup>14</sup>Does not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame to him? <sup>15</sup>But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering.

**The Apostle Paul reiterated the same in I Corinthians 11:7-15. God is a male even though the female strain is within Him. There is no long hair, no beard and He is not old – but *ancient*. Isn't this a completely different picture of God, your Father?**

**Revelation 1:15-16** <sup>15</sup>And his feet like to fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace; and his voice as the sound of many waters. <sup>16</sup>And he had in his right hand seven stars: and out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword: and his countenance was as the sun shines in his strength.

**Imagine “*5*and his feet like to fine brass” as if on fire. The face is the ultimate source of His *energy* (His brain). *White* is the intensity that is somewhat like the sun. The lower**

part is amber. Going down to His feet (burnished brass), there is less energy.

## The 20 Gemstones

There are 20 gems in New Jerusalem. So if you were looking at God, He would be in a multi-glowing, colorful state. Some might ask, “*What race is God?*” The answer to that is, “*He is a combination of all the races!*” “<sup>16</sup>*And He had in his right hand seven stars* [you will see later how these ‘seven stars’ are ‘angels’], *And out of his mouth went a sharp two-edged sword and his countenance* [His appearance] *was as the sun shines in His strength.*”

**This is The Son and The Father looking exactly the same.**

**Revelations 5:2-7** <sup>2</sup>And I saw a strong angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book and to loose the seals thereof? <sup>3</sup>And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof. <sup>6</sup>And I beheld and, lo, in the midst of the throne and of the four beasts and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. <sup>7</sup>And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

No man was able to open *the book with the seven seals* (Revelation 5). It states John began to cry. And the angel told him, “*Don't worry, there is one here, <sup>2</sup>Who is worthy to open the book and to loose the seals thereof?*”

Revelations 4:2-4 <sup>2</sup>And immediately I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in heaven and one sat on the throne. <sup>3</sup>And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald. <sup>4</sup>And round about the throne were four and twenty seats: and upon the seats I saw four and twenty elders sitting, clothed in white raiment; and they had on their heads crowns of gold.

“<sup>2</sup>*And immediately, I was in the spirit: and, behold, a throne was set in Heaven and one sat on the throne. <sup>3</sup>And he that sat was to look upon like a jasper and a sardine stone: and there was a rainbow round about the throne, in sight like to an emerald*” (Revelation 4).

## Great Emerald Throne

There is a great emerald rainbow above His head and the whole color spectrum of brightness radiates from His *body*. To see who this is, read Revelation 5:4-7.

<sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof. <sup>6</sup>And I beheld and, lo, in the midst of the

throne and of the four beasts and in the midst of the elders, stood a Lamb [speaking of Christ] as it had been slain, having seven horns and seven eyes, which are the seven Spirits of God sent forth into all the earth. <sup>7</sup>And he came and took the book out of the right hand of him that sat upon the throne.

The Father's *throne* had a sardine stone with a jasper and emerald rainbow above His *head*. Jesus, as The Slain Lamb, went to The Father and received *the book* to open it. In Revelation 4 and 5, The Father was sitting on the throne. He looks the same as Jesus in Revelation 1. Jesus and The Father not only look like human beings in *their glory*, they *look like each other* as members of one family – *God's family*. This is who and what God looks like. His name is '*I Am*' and He looks like a human being.

## Radiant Fullness

God is composed of *Spirit* – which can also be perceived as *a super powerful light*. His *body* glistens like jewels that have the appearance of changing colors. The brightness surrounding Him gives off the colors of the rainbow. This is what your God and my God looks like. He is *The One and Only* God. These comparisons, also, include the electromagnetic powers that science is beginning to discover. These breathtaking revelations have been a part of the biblical record for thousands of years!

In summary, God is composed of perpetual energy just like the wind. Primarily, He is composed of photons or *light*. He is *ancient* but never old. He is not wrinkled and has a continuous glorious glow of *gem-like colors* radiat-

ing from Him as a rainbow. His garments can change at His command. His face is white, full of energy and His hair is a brilliant white radiance that contains the entire color spectrum. His hair is short and may be curly (wavy) as wool. He has no beard.

Proceeding down His *body*, the color is blue, violet and becoming like burnished brass at His *legs*. The brilliance from His *body* surrounds Him like the colors of a rainbow – and the emerald color is above His *head*. His name is, “*I AM, YHWH (JHVH), The Existing One.*” Job and David talked about who God was and what He looked like. You are getting to know about The One True God.

## Chapter 4

# GOD'S CHARACTER AND PERSONALITY

When you diligently study all that is in *The Bible*, you find your God is an awesome *being*. He is a God composed of *spirit, wind and light*. Now, you are ready to learn what His character is like and what type of personality He has. You will learn about God's basic nature and how He thinks. You will see how He reacts to various situations. You will learn the full meanings and definitions of His names or titles. You will not only understand God but you will finally comprehend His *great plan* for the billions of individuals He has created.

### What's In A Name?

When a child is born, parents spend a considerable amount of time choosing the right name for the infant. They carefully consider *the meanings* of the different names. God, also, is very selective when He chooses names for His children. Beginning with Adam, the very first man, God chose an appropriate name. In Hebrew, the name "*Adam*" means "*red earth*" because he was created from red earth. Eve came out of Adam's body. "*Eve*" means "*mother of all creation*" or "*life*." God named them for what they were. God gives titles or names that describe what a particular person is or represents.

Genesis 1:26 And God said, Let us make man in our



image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over the cattle and over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

Another example is when David married Abigail. Originally, she was married to Nabal, who was killed because he acted unwisely. The word "*Nabal*" means "*fool*." Abigail was an honorable woman but she married a fool. She learned from her mistake because, later, she became the wife of David.

So it is with God's various titles or names. There are two ways you can find the meaning of His names. The first method is by reading the context. When a specific name for God is mentioned, it is used in reference to what He is talking about. You must understand the context in which God's title (name) is used. Keep in mind, God has many powers and abilities. When carrying out His various *purposes*, He specifies their meaning through the various titles or names.

## To Really Know God

If you really want to know as much as you can about God, assemble all the pieces of His puzzle He has left for you. In order to understand His various titles or names in the context of a given subject, you must be a good detective and compile all the facts. The second method is to find the meaning of a word in Hebrew (*The Old Testament*) and in Greek (*The New Testament*) in order to obtain *the true meaning*. You must fully understand key words that have been translated into *The King James Version*. A greater

understanding comes through the true meanings of God's various titles or names. In *The Old Testament*, seven basic designations are used for God. However, *only* two names have been used in *The Old and New Testament* translations for *these seven titles*. Those two names are "God" and "LORD." Nevertheless, seven different, meaningful titles are used when God's name is mentioned. The meanings of these seven titles or names tell you what He is really like – and fully explain *His plan*.

## Elohim

Genesis 1:26 is a famous verse. Here, the true meaning for God is distinct, explanatory and carries a great insight, "26And God said." The word "God" in Hebrew comes from "Elohim." "El" in Hebrew means "mighty." When you see "El" it conveys God as being "mighty." But the word "Elohim" is a plural word which translates to "manifesting a multiplicity" or "plurality of God." "Elohim" can also mean "angels," "elders" or "judges." Christians get confused by this meaning and come up with two or three gods – hence *the common trinity*. However, the name "Elohim" carries a far bigger connotation than merely referring to separate individuals. The verse in question goes on to say, "26And God said, Let us make man in our image." To whom is He talking?

*The Bible* tells you that in the beginning *The Word* was with God and *The Word* was God. Does this mean that God and Christ were sitting down and having a serious conversation together? That may seem logical. However, in this verse, He was referring to many more beings than just two having a conversation between themselves. How

many other entities look like God and The Word? Perhaps The 24 Elders? (Note: The word “*image*” not only means “*shadow*” or “*not quite real*” but it could mean “*a phantom*”). When God said, “*to make man in our image,*” He created this shadow to look like a human. (Note: this is very different from Christ being *a stamped impress* of The Father as mentioned in Hebrews 1).

God, as *Elohim*, could include 24 Elders and also, perhaps, the angels. This conversation was about creating others who resembled God or who were made in God's image. When God stated, “*Let us,*” He was talking about *The Godhead*. He was making man as *a phantom* or *an image* and gave him the responsibility of being placed over everything God had *created* on the earth.

Genesis 2:18 And the LORD God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him an help mate for him.

In *Genesis* you learn what Elohim is thinking about, “*And the LORD God.*” Translated from Hebrew, this is “*Adoni Elohim.*” (“Adoni” will be explained later and will add greater meaning than just “Master”). “<sup>18</sup>*And the LORD God [or The Master Elohim] said it is not good that man should be alone.*” This gives you a little insight into how God *thinks*. He said it is not good for those who are made in His image *to be alone*.

## A Female Helper

Realize that God is good and that He had a specific reason for not wanting Adam to be alone. *His intent was al-*

*ways to procreate Himself.* When He said, “*It is not good for man to be alone,*” God was allowing you to know His *thoughts.* He was telling you something very important, “*That the man should not be alone, I will make him a help mate for him.*”

God is reproducing Himself and gives that reproduction power to those who have been created in His image. Then, they will have the same kind of reproduction attributes that He has. This is a fantastic and precious gift. It is *the gift to create life.*

Genesis 2:21-24 <sup>21</sup>And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam and he slept; and he took one of his ribs and closed up the flesh instead thereof; <sup>22</sup>And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman and brought her to the man. <sup>23</sup>And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. <sup>24</sup>Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

This is God's *thinking.* God did this and it wasn't Adam's doing. You cannot reproduce any better than by duplicating what The One has created and brought into *being* (you). God tells this in the next verse. “<sup>24</sup>*Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they shall be one flesh.*” God is One. You are becoming *One* with God. God says it is not good for a *being* to dwell alone. He says a man should have a *helpmate.* The best way to accomplish this is to reproduce yourself with the same genes. You could call it “*spiritual DNA.*”

## Mother Of All Creation

Eve is the mother of all creation and Adam was the first type of Christ. Adam could have been The Savior. Eve, being his wife and mother of all future children, would have been compared to *the church*. Adam would have ended up being Christ or The Savior of The World. He was given a great opportunity. But Adam *failed* to qualify. After Adam failed, another seed had to come in the flesh (Jesus Christ). He came to fulfill the role of *a Savior*.

Then, there needed to be a helpmate for The Savior, which is *the church*. All of this is embodied in *the title "Elohim."* The word "*Elohim*" shows a plurality of God reproducing Himself in all of His *creation* (I Corinthians 15:28). Adam, along with his helpmate (Eve), could have been "*the saviors of the world.*" Adam would have been The Savior and Eve would have been The Mother of The Whole World. This is a very large concept to embrace but it is a critical message that comes through many *Scriptures in The Bible*.

## God, Abraham And Covenants

Genesis 17:3-7 <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations. <sup>5</sup>Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after

you in their generations for an everlasting covenant,  
to be a God to you and to your seed after you.

*A covenant had to be reintroduced so everything could be done in a proper way. “<sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations.”* The Hebrew word “*Elohiym*” breaks down to “*El*,” which means “*mighty*” and “*hiym*,” which means “*plural*” or “*a love-covenanting God*.” All this means “*God in covenant*.” *Elohim* not only means *plural* (many) but also, means that He enters into *covenants or agreements*. The title “*Elohim*” encompasses “*mighty*,” “*many*” or “*love covenanting*.” It also means “*entering into an agreement*” with Abraham through whom *the promise seed* would come – which was The Promise of Christ. Notice, there is no Israel or *chosen people* at this time.

God speaks as *Elohim* and communicates to the whole world, “<sup>5</sup>*Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting [age-lasting] covenant [agreement], to be a God [Elohim] to you and to your seed after you.”* When God uses the name *Elohim*, it is used in reference to *the universe* or to *the entire creation*. God will be *All and In All*.

Ephesians 3:9-15 <sup>9</sup>And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world has been hid in God, who created all

things by Jesus Christ: <sup>10</sup>To the intent that now to the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God, <sup>11</sup>According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: <sup>12</sup>In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. <sup>13</sup>Wherefore I desire that you faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees unto the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

When explaining his responsibility, Paul says, “<sup>9</sup>*And to make all men see what is the fellowship of the mystery, which from the beginning of the world.*” This mystery started from the beginning of the world, with Adam and Eve under Elohim. Paul said, “*has been hid in God, who created all things by Jesus Christ [The Word], <sup>10</sup>To the intent that now to the principalities and powers in heavenly places might be known by the church the manifold wisdom of God.*”

## The Eternal Purpose

When God reveals *who He is, what He is and how He thinks*, He is giving you *His wisdom*. “<sup>11</sup>*According to the eternal purpose which he purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: <sup>12</sup>In whom we have boldness and access with confidence by the faith of him. <sup>13</sup>Wherefore I desire that you faint not at my tribulation for you, which is your glory. <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.*” The Greek word for “family” is “*patria*” or “*Our Father.*”

As you can see, when God said, “*Let us make man in our image,*” He was talking to a large number of *beings*. He is referring to His future *purpose* or *plan*. *Elohim* refers to God’s objective to create a *Universal Family* – Sons of God – to complete His *work* according to His *word*. God will, then, be *all and in all*.

Hebrews 10:1 For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

Everything in *The Law* is a *shadow* which gives the basic instructions to come to Christ and The Father. In *Romans*, Paul explains that “*the invisible things*” of God are perceived in *the physical elements* which a person observes in the world.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

God is *Elohim* in everyone. So the name “*Elohim*” means God “*is all and in all.*” It is *plural in purpose*. God is *in all* and He is all encompassing. When He uses the *title* “*Elohim,*” He is talking about everything *He created*.

## Everything In Heaven And Earth

That is why Paul said, “*Everything that is named in heaven and in earth is named after this name.*” Rightly so, since He



created everything and He upholds everything that exists. If He didn't uphold all the things that exist, then where would you be? No one would be here. Whenever God uses the title "*Elohim*," He is talking about His *completeness* as God. God is *All*. *The plural* God, or the *all-encompassing* God, is a Godhead for whom *the entire heaven and earth* are named.

In *The Old Testament*, *Elohim* is speaking in *the universal* sense. This is the reason He made *the covenant* with Abraham. It was *A Universal Covenant*. It was covering *all nations* through *The One Seed* (I Corinthians 15:22) which was going to come through Abraham. That was *the promise*. God knows it is not good for man to be alone so He is *reproducing* Himself.

When they accused Christ of calling Himself The Son of God, Jesus said, "*Aren't you called gods?*" (John 10:34). They all came from God. Paul said that *The Word* was *with God* and *The Word* was *God*. Everything is God. There remains just *one* God – regardless of *the 24 elders*. This is all in The Godhead (God is all). Each time God speaks universally, He uses the title or name "*Elohim*" as "*possessor*," "*maker*" and "*creator of all*." This is how God *thinks*. Therefore, all of God's titles and names tell you exactly what He is like or what He is doing at a designated time.

## YHWH (JHVH) – The Righteous God

Exodus 3:14 And God said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM: and he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.

The name YHWH (JHVH) causes a considerable degree of trouble for some individuals. Frankly, many people create different religious beliefs based on what they think this word means. “YHWH” (“JHVH”) means “*the existing one*” or the “*I Am that I Am.*” Some people think that you should only use this particular name to address God, The Existing One. But, this is not true. God has many titles (names) because He has many powers. He used “*I Am that I Am*” for Israel. In Exodus 3:14, Moses was attempting to back out of the job God assigned him.

God said, “*I want you to go and set My people free. Go talk to Pharaoh.*” Moses said, “*I can't even talk.*” Then Moses asks, “*Who shall I say sent me?*” *The One* who will send Moses is *the same* God as *Elohim* – only this time God is focusing upon a nation with *a specific purpose* in mind. God is not speaking here in a universal sense or about all mankind. Rather, He is referring to a single nation that will perform a task according to His *will*. He is dealing with Israel, personally, as their God. That is why He used a different name. “<sup>14</sup>*And God [Elohim] said to Moses, I AM THAT I AM*” (YHWH or JHVH).

### Unknown Pronunciation

No one knows the pronunciation of this name because *no vowels* exist – *only consonants*. “*And he said, Thus shall you say to the children of Israel, I AM has sent me to you.*” Now what did He want them to do?

Exodus 3:18 And they shall hearken to your voice: and you shall come, you and the elders of Israel, to the king of Egypt and you shall say to him, The LORD God

of the Hebrews has met with us: and now let us go, we beseech you, three days' journey into the wilderness, that we may sacrifice to the Lord our God.

The reason God wanted the children of Israel to come out of Egypt was for them to begin sacrificing to Him. At this time, He was playing a totally different role. What type of role was it? To find out, you need to examine the root of the word "*JHVH*" or "*YHWH*." It means "*righteous*," "*just*" and "*judgmental*."

This is the most common image that Christians have about God when they read *The Old Testament*. You have a very black-and-white type of God, with *sinner*s on one side and *the righteous* on the other side.

### Sudden Idolatry

What took place when Moses went to Mount Sinai to receive *The Ten Commandments*? He returned to discover that The Children of Israel had turned to *idolatry*. They had created the golden calf and were having a big party. What did God intend to do? He was going to kill them. This is *JHVH* (*YHWH*). This is God revealing Himself as *perfect* or *without sin*. He is *totally righteous*.

God has complete free choice and He decides to be *righteous*, never making mistakes. He always makes *the right decision* and if anyone sins, *just punishment* must be given. This is the God that Israel knew firsthand. *JHVH* (*YHWH*) is *judgmental* and *just*.

Sinners are always punished. In *The Law*, which God gave

to Israel, it was a *concept of choice* – good or evil (Deuteronomy 30:19). Later, David and The Prophets would begin to understand *this mercy*. Israel never understood God's forgiveness, because they would never *repent*. All they could see was *this righteous, powerful, judgmental and just God*. To Israel, God was a *fearful being*. In fact, because of their fear, they didn't want Him to speak to them.

God said that He had chosen this way because He is the “*I AM WHAT I AM*” or “*I AM THAT I AM*.” You are, now, beginning to see the *different characteristics* of God. He is more than just *Elohim* who says, “*it is not good for man to be alone*.” He is a God who wants to *give* of Himself, as a *creator*.

JHVH (YHWH) is a different side of God. It is a God who demands *perfection* because God, Himself, is *perfect*. But, God is also giving you the opportunity to become as excellent as He is. On the other hand, if you stepped in the wrong direction, you would be required to pay the consequences. This is The God of *blessings* and *cursings* (Deuteronomy 30). This is The God of Israel. Israel was to be a *witness* of what God is to all the nations – just as *the church* should be a *witness* for Christ. *The church* should be *perfect* – just as God is *perfect* (Matthew 5:48). You will find that God as Your Father has a different connotation from *the “I Am that I Am.”* That is a vital factor to consider.

## Two Different Approaches

There are two different approaches about God that you should consider. The first approach is *spit* and *polish*,

right down the line. It leaves no margin for error. The other approach is the characteristic of being easy to entreat. He is The God who will listen to you, personally. This is another manifestation of the character and personality of God.

The reason that God was found to be in the role of the “*I AM THAT I AM*” for Israel was to set an example of His *goodness*. So, He gave them *The Law*. God did this because The Israelites did not know or understand *right* from *wrong* and continued to be *unrepentant* (I Timothy 1:9-10). *The Law* told them what sin was, so they would know *what to do* and *what not to do*. God said *The Law* was to be Israel’s *righteousness* (Deuteronomy 6:25). He explained that if they would keep His Commandments, Statutes and Ordinances, then, they would be *a blessing* to all nations. This would, also, be a way of setting *an example* for all the other nations.

The Israelites were to make God’s name known. What name? It is JHVH (YHWH). Go through all the various meanings of God’s *seven* different titles (names). Now, you have more of an understanding of *The Law* and it will help you immensely as you read *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers* and *Deuteronomy*. You will understand each of God’s titles and names explain all the aspects of God’s *plan* for you.

John 14:6 Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me.

Thomas asked Jesus to show him *the way*. “*Jesus said to him, ‘I am the way.’*” Understand that Christianity is *not*

*a religion – it is a way of life.* The *Works of The Law* do not apply to Christians, because it would make this new way of life a religion or ritual which only points to God through Christ. There is a big difference! Jesus said, “*I am the way.*” Remember, in John 6:29 He said, “*This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent.*” And Christ said, “*I am the way.*” Christ was saying that you must live as He lived and be like Him.

Don't hate anyone. Don't *covet* that which belongs to someone else. Just be kind to everyone. If someone needs a coat, give him a coat. If you don't have one or can't afford to buy him one, then ask a relative, a friend or a neighbor if they have a spare coat. That is Christianity at work. Jesus literally tells you that He is *the truth* (this is no lie). He is *the way* for Christians to follow. Following Christ, in *the truth*, is *the best and only way to live.*

There is no other way for Christians to learn *perfection*. No man comes to The Father but by Christ. You now know the significance of JHVH (YHWH). I AM WHAT I AM. He is *your supreme example.*

## El Shaddai

As discussed, “*El*” alone means “*mighty.*” Followers of Islam call God “*Allah*” or “*El*” or “*The Mighty One.*” But the full title is “*El Shaddai.*” “*Shaddai*” in Hebrew means “*the breast*” or “*nurturing.*” It signifies pouring out like a mother who takes the child to her breast and nourishes the child. “*Shaddai*” is “*a nurturing, loving mother.*” You will find that whenever the title *El Shaddai* is used, *there is a mighty God who is giving, nourishing and pouring out.*

So, “*El Shaddai*” means “*powerful,*” “*nourishing*” and “*giving.*” It is “*a mighty giver who can give everything that He has.*”

Genesis 14:18-23 <sup>18</sup>And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the priest of the most high God. <sup>19</sup>And he blessed him and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, possessor of heaven and earth: <sup>20</sup>And blessed be the most high God, which has delivered your enemies into your hand. And he gave him tithes of all. <sup>21</sup>And, the king of Sodom said to Abram, Give me the persons and take the goods to yourself. <sup>22</sup>And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand to the LORD, the most high God, the possessor of heaven and earth. <sup>23</sup>That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet and that I will not take any thing that is yours, less you should say, I have made Abram rich.

No human words in any language can fully describe God. Take the case when Abraham met Melchizedek, The High Priest. Why was Melchizedek, at that time, a High Priest? He was High Priest over all humanity – but especially for those who called upon The Name of The Lord. *The purpose of a Priest is to intercede for the sins of others.* Notice, in *Genesis*, “<sup>18</sup>*And Melchizedek king of Salem brought forth bread and wine* [a likeness to Passover service]. *And he was the priest.*” Melchizedek was *The Priest of El Elyon, the giver, the nurturer or giving of blessings.* “*El Elyon*” is The God who *prosper*s you. This is a powerful example of that fact.

“*El Shaddai*” is translated in English as “*The Most High*”

*God,” “The Almighty Giver” or “provider who blessed Abram.” And, Melchizedek “<sup>19</sup>blessed him and said, Blessed be Abram of the most high God, [El Shaddai] possessor of heaven and earth.” Here is *El Elyon, The Nurturer* having in His dominion all the heavens and the whole earth. From this powerful position, He was blessing Abraham.*

*This nurturing God made Abraham rich. This is the reason why Abraham and Melchizedek met. They met for a much greater reason than you might have thought. “<sup>20</sup>And blessed be the most high God [El Shaddai], which has delivered your enemies into your hand. And he gave him tithes of all.”*

### Why Tithe To Melchizedek?

Why did Abraham tithe to Melchizedek? Perhaps it was a Law. But, *no Law was given* for another 430 years! Remember, the name of “*El Elyon*” means “*The One who gives all the blessings and who pours forth all His goodness.*” He, also, *nurtures His creation.* Everything comes from El Shaddai. The Mighty El Shaddai is the possessor of heaven and earth. Now, it says that Abraham gave tithes. He tells you why he tithed to Melchizedek. It has nothing to do with *The Law.* “<sup>21</sup>*And the king of Sodom said to Abram, Give me the persons and take the goods to yourself.*” You have to understand this first point.

The King of Sodom asked permission to keep his people so he could still retain his kingdom. He said to take everything, which includes all the material wealth, the riches, the blessings, the food, the cattle and the produce. What was Abraham's reply? When you are tithing to Levi, you



are left with 90% – so this was done because of *The Law of Tithing*. The reason Abraham gave a tithe to Melchizedek was to show that he recognized *God was El Elyon, The Giver of All Blessings*. Abraham tithed to show that El Shaddai, his God, *prospered him* and would continue to prosper him.

If Abraham kept *The Law of Tithing*, he should have kept the remainder of the spoils. “<sup>22</sup>*And Abram said to the king of Sodom, I have lift up mine hand to the LORD , the most high God [El Shaddai], the possessor of heaven and earth [God has everything].* <sup>23</sup>*That I will not take from a thread even to a shoelatchet and that I will not take any thing that is yours, less you should say, I have made Abram rich.*”

God will do the same *for you*. God wants to give everything to His *creation*. And, *El Shaddai* was *The One* who made Abraham rich. That is why he *tithed*. This is the true meaning which is based on *The Scriptures*.

When Jacob had his dream, God was revealing the same lesson. Jacob was running away from his brother and was scared to death. He had nothing, so he negotiated with God by asking God to protect him and bring him back home, safely. Jacob knew that God was El Shaddai. So he said the same thing that Abraham said, “*I’ll give you a tithe.*” In other words, Jacob understood that God was *The Blessor of All*. God is El Shaddai, The Protector and The God who prospered Jacob. God’s *nature, personality and character* only wants to *give*. God desires to *give* all that He is and has. God is *agapè*! This is *charity*. He can do nothing but *give*. How much does God *give*? He wants to *share* with His *creation everything He has*.

Have you ever heard of spoiling your children or grandchildren? This is just a small part of “*God – In You.*” Who can say “*No*” to a grandchild when the gifts would not be harmful? Well, God can’t resist either. Christ says if you ask for bread, will your Father give you a stone? How much more would your Heavenly Father, who is good, give you than your earthly father, who is but a combination of good and evil? El Shaddai shows His character and personality. He can’t keep from giving. There is only one difference between God and mankind. God is good and righteous *all the time* while mankind is not. God says that if you are not good, then He will *discipline*. God is *just* and humans *are not just*. God is fair but humans do not know *true justice*. God is not prejudiced but humans are. God does not discriminate yet humans are prone to do just that. God is much greater than anyone could ever imagine.

## Elyon

Genesis 17:5 Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you.

Another title for God is “*Elyon.*” God blessed Abraham because he was The Father of All Nations. God’s titles interchange at different times. When you read Genesis 14:18, you will find that He is not only *El Shaddai* but He is *Elyon* as well. This shows you that God is a *gift-giver* in addition to His other characteristics. “*Elyon*” literally means “*gifts*” and “*Elyon*” possesses all the heavens and all the earth. Wherever the word “*Elyon*” is used, it means “*gifts from the highest.*” *Elyon* owns everything

and is willing to give to His Creation. Everything God gives is *a gift*. You cannot earn it nor do you deserve it. It all comes from God. “*Elyon*” is “*the gift giver*.”

## El Olam

Genesis 21:10-14 <sup>10</sup>Wherefore she said to Abraham, Cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac. <sup>11</sup>And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. <sup>12</sup>And God said to Abraham, Let it not be grievous in your sight because of the lad and because of your bondwoman; in all that Sarah has said to you, hearken to her voice; for in Isaac shall your seed be called. <sup>13</sup>And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is your seed. <sup>14</sup>And Abraham rose up early in the morning and took bread and a bottle of water and gave it to Hagar, putting it on her shoulder and the child and sent her away: and she departed and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.

Another title for God is “*El Olam*” which is a very significant one because it involves The Jubilee Year. This title for God explains that He is “*a covenant keeper*.” Abraham is talking about Hagar and Ishmael.

<sup>10</sup>Wherefore she [Sarah] said to Abraham, cast out this bondwoman and her son: for the son of this bondwoman shall not be heir with my son, even with Isaac.

“*El Olam*” is “*inheritance*,” “*inheritor*” or “*age lasting*”

*God.*” It also means “*a covenant keeper.*”

<sup>11</sup>And the thing was very grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son. <sup>12</sup>And God said to Abraham, Let it not be grievous in your sight because of the lad and because of your bondwoman; in all that Sarah has said to you, hearken to her voice; for in Isaac shall your seed be called.

### Hagar's Fate

*The Law of Inheritance* had to go to the first-born male seed of the wife. But, in this case, it was the bondwoman who bore the first male child for Abraham. So the child, Ishmael, did not have *a right to the inheritance*. This is why God sent Hagar and Ishmael away. “<sup>13</sup>*And also of the son of the bondwoman will I make a nation, because he is your seed.*” Remember, in Genesis 17, He (God) was *Elohim*. He covered everyone *universally*, although Ishmael's seed didn't deserve *the inheritance* because he wasn't born of the true wife. God still followed through with His *promise* that He would, also, make a nation out of Ishmael and kings would come from his lineage.

So, God took care of Ishmael, “<sup>14</sup>*And Abraham rose up early in the morning and took bread and a bottle of water and gave it to Hagar, putting it on her shoulder and the child and sent her away: and she departed and wandered in the wilderness of Beersheba.*”

Hagar finally got to the place where she and her son were going to die of thirst and hunger. “<sup>17</sup>*And God heard the voice of the lad; and the angel of God called to Hagar out of*

*heaven and said to her, What ails you, Hagar? fear not; for God has heard the voice of the lad.” Then, God provided Hagar with a pool of water to drink.*

Genesis 21:33 is the account where Abimelech recognized that God blessed Abraham, just as He blessed Ishmael who was the son of a bondwoman. “<sup>33</sup>*And Abraham planted a grove in Beersheba and called there on the name of the LORD, the everlasting God.*”

This is *El Olam* or the *age-lasting God of the covenant keeper of inheritance*. God's *inheritance* lasts forever! This subject matter is beginning to illustrate how *El Olam* was *The One God* who gives what He has and never takes back any of *the inheritance* He has promised. *He keeps His promises*. You can always count on Him. God does not lie. This is another part of God's personality. God's personality reveals that He always lives up to His Word. In fact, His Word is forever. He is *The Word*. Your Father is *a continuously-giving God*. God's *giving* comes from an *inheritance* that is given directly by God.

## Adonai

Ezekiel 16:1-10 <sup>1</sup>Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations <sup>3</sup>And say, Thus says the Lord God to Jerusalem; Your birth and your nativity is of the land of Canaan; your father was an Amorite and you mother an Hittite. <sup>4</sup>And as for your nativity, in the day you were born your navel was not cut, neither were you washed in water to supple you; you were not salted at all, nor swaddled at all. <sup>5</sup>None eye pitied

you, to do any of these to you, to have compassion upon you; but you were cast out in the open field, to the loathing of your person, in the day that you were born. <sup>6</sup>And when I passed by you and saw you polluted in your own blood, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live; yea, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live. <sup>7</sup>I have caused you to multiply as the bud of the field and you have increased and waxen great and you are come to excellent ornaments: your breasts are fashioned and your hair is grown, whereas you were naked and bare. <sup>8</sup>Now when I passed by you and looked upon you, behold, your time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over you and covered your nakedness: yea, I swore to you and entered into a covenant with you, says the Lord God and you becamest mine. <sup>9</sup>Then washed I you with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away your blood from you and I anointed you with oil. <sup>10</sup>I clothed you also with broidered work and shod you with badgers' skin and I girded you about with fine linen and I covered you with silk.

## Probing Deeper

Let's probe into a more comprehensive and significant relationship with "*Adonai*" which is another of God's titles. "*Adonai*" is translated as "*LORD*" or "*Master*." Every time you read the words "*LORD God*" it means "*The Master God*," although the word "*Master*" carries a greater significance. This is a *vital* perspective. There are many times when the word "*Master*" or "*Adonai*" is used in various texts. It appears, also, when referring to *human beings* as *masters*. It carries a different connotation than just God. The mean-

ing is “*a being in charge of,*” “*responsible for*” or “*over someone.*” Now, an astounding reality of what *Adonai* really means. This is especially true when explaining the responsibilities that each husband must have.

## A Running Commentary

**Ezekiel 16:1-10** <sup>1</sup>Again the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, cause Jerusalem to know her abominations [He is talking about The City of Jerusalem], <sup>3</sup>And say, Thus says the Lord God to Jerusalem; **Your birth and your nativity is of the land of Canaan** [Canaan was the place where The Jebusites dwelled, a nothing place]; **Your father was an Amorite and your mother an Hittite.** <sup>4</sup>And as for your nativity, **in the day you were born your navel was not cut** [just left to bleed and nobody paid attention to Jerusalem at all]. **Neither were you washed in water to supple you; you were not salted at all, nor swaddled at all** [they used to tie up a child in swaddling clothes to keep their bones together so the child would get rigid or come together]. <sup>5</sup>None eye pitied you, to do any of these to you, to have compassion upon you [no one cared]; **But you were cast out in the open field, to the loathing of your person, in the day that you were born** [when Jerusalem started]. <sup>6</sup>And when I passed by you and saw you polluted in your own blood [dying as a city and becoming a ghost town], **I said to you when you were in your blood, Live; yea, I said to you when you were in your blood, Live** [beginning to restore her]. <sup>7</sup>**I have caused you to multiply as the bud of the field** [beginning to flourish] **and you have increased and waxen great** [in Solomon's time, it was known all

over the world as God's place]. **And you art come to excellent ornaments** [describing a bride or talking about a wife]. **Your breasts are fashioned and your hair is grown, whereas you were naked and bare.** <sup>8</sup>**Now when I passed by you and looked upon you, behold, your time was the time of love; and I spread my skirt over you and covered your nakedness: yea, I swear to you and entered into a covenant with you, says the Lord God [your Adonai, God] and you becomest mine.** <sup>9</sup>**Then washed I you with water, yea, I thoroughly washed away your blood from you and I anointed you with oil.** <sup>10</sup>**I clothed you also with broidered work and shod you with badgers' skin and I girded you about with fine linen and I covered you with silk.**

**For a more in depth perspective, read Ephesians 5:23-28. What is the responsibility of the husband? The husband provides for the wife's needs.**

## **Master And Slave Relationship**

**This is a good time to explain the master/slave relationship. God's idea of slavery is to make the slave better by teaching him to be self-sufficient. On the other hand, man's idea of slavery is to take advantage of the slave. Do you see the vital difference? *A Christian is a "duloss" or "slave" of Christ and as Christians, you are destined to become The Bride of Christ.***

**Christ will prepare you so that you are without blemish or wrinkles. He wants you to become *Holy and perfect*. The husband's job is to be the head of the wife. *As Adonai or God, He is your Head (through Christ). He is Lord, Master***



or Husband of *the church* (The Bride). When you read The Laws of Slavery in *The Book of The Law*, a Hebrew was to be a slave for only six years. When *the seventh year* came, he was *set free*. God's type of slavery is to have the master take charge and train the person who went into slavery for six years. After the six years, the slave should have learned from his mistakes and be able to take care of himself and his family. In *the seventh year* he should be able to make it on his own.

A husband's job is to make the wife and family prosperous. He should make them happy and thankful. Slavery between master and slave is a positive relationship that should improve the slave. How much greater is a man's responsibility to a wife and family than that of a slave!

*The whole Book of Philemon* deals with Onesimus and slavery. Paul says, "I am sending Onesimus to you who was once unprofitable for you, but now is not only profitable to you, but to me and everyone. If he owes you anything, lay it to my charge" (Colossians 4:9, paraphrased). *Adonai* is the title that denotes God's character trait of taking leadership over you.

He becomes responsible for you and you, as the church, submit like a wife. He leads you to *perfection*. The name "*Adonai*" carries the distinction of "*a master who serves those under him.*" Never forget the difference between God's form of government and man's methods of government. Those under man's methods of government always find that the rulers are those who rule over others and want to get all the benefits. Those in charge in God's *way of government* are caring and giving. That is the full

meaning of *Adonai*. Your Master, God, becomes *One with you* “*In Christ*” and you are *married* to Christ.

## JHVH – Sabaoth

Malachi 3:13-17 <sup>13</sup>Your words have been stout against me, says the LORD. Yet you say, What have we spoken so much against you? <sup>14</sup>You have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the Lord of hosts? <sup>15</sup>And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. <sup>16</sup>Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name. <sup>17</sup>And they shall be mine, said the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serves him.

*JHVH* – “*Sabaoth*” – is the seventh name for God in *The Old Testament*. Christians think this has to do with The Sabbath. The name “*JHVH*” is “*I Am that I Am*” but “*Sabaoth*” is “*LORD of Hosts.*” *Malachi* gives an example of the seventh name, *JHVH, Sabaoth*, by relating the trials that human beings go through in this life. This name tells you about God's nature, His character and how He looks at you. “<sup>13</sup>*Your words have been stout against me, says the LORD* [*JHVH, Sabaoth, speaking*]. *Yet you say, what have we spoken so much against you?*” God declares that mankind speaks against Him but you may say that you never said anything against Him. Then consider Malachi 3:14-

15. “<sup>14</sup>*You have said, It is vain to serve God [no reason to serve God] and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts [This Lord of Hosts is JHVH Sabaoth].*” People say that you seem to receive no help when serving God. “<sup>15</sup>*And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.*” This is referring to those who said that they followed God but it did not do them any good. Instead, the wicked have been blessed and the criminals have gotten away with murder.

### A Hopeless Situation

Have you ever been in a situation where you thought you couldn't take it any more? Did you feel that the pressures were just too much for you? You've tried to be a good Christian. You want to keep serving God. You pray to Him. You ask Him for help because problems have plagued your life whether it is a sick child, the loss of a job or a death in the family.

This is a time when all hope seems to be gone and you feel like there is no reason to obey or follow God. Malachi 3:16 states, “<sup>16</sup>*Then they that feared the Lord spoke often one to another: and the Lord, hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written.*” God's nature is such that He *never forgets* what you have gone through or are going through. Your God *never forgets anything* you did to remain faithful to Him. Your Great God has a *Book of Remembrance*, “<sup>16</sup>*before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name [the name JHVH, Sabaoth, Lord of hosts].* <sup>17</sup>*And they shall be mine saith the Lord of*

*hosts* [described in the context] *in that day when I make up my jewels.*” You will look like God and since God looks like jewels, you, too, will look like precious gems. “<sup>17</sup>*And I will spare them, as a man spares his own son that serves him.*” When all hope is gone, God says that it is in His *nature* to always be there to deliver you. He won't have something more important to do. You can always count on God. No matter what you are required to go through, God will be there for you.

### A Quick Summary

Now, to summarize God's titles descriptions in *The Old Testament*: 1) Elohim – Universal God, 2) JHVH or YHWH – The Righteous God, The Judgmental God, 3) El Shaddai – The Pourer or Nurturer, 4) Elyon – Almighty, Most High, 5) El Olam – The God of Inheritance, 6) Adonai – The Lord or Master for your good, your Husband and finally 7) JHVH, Sabaoth – The Lord of Hosts. God is always there. All of God's titles and names apply universally with a very personal family relationship. It ranges from an all-encompassing God describing His *totality* to a *very personal* God who deals *One-on-one* with His *creation*.

I John 2:27 But the anointing which you have received of him abides in you and you need not that any man teach you: but as the same anointing teaches you of all things and is truth and is no lie and even as it has taught you, you shall abide in him.

The Apostle Paul said that you now have a Father so you can cry out “*Abba, Father, Dad, Daddy or Papa.*” He goes

from a God who is Almighty and impersonal to a God who is *nurturing* and *personal*. Yet, with all His *power*, He is a God who not only thinks about you but is responsible for upholding everything in the world.

## The Anointing

It is very important for you to realize that God is One who deals with you, personally, in a *Father/child relationship*. He has gone from a huge powerful God (Universal God) to a Father who listens to you just as a *human father* listens to his child. In I John 2, The Apostle John said, “<sup>27</sup>*But the anointing, which you have received of him* [the anointing of His Spirit].” John says that when Christ was sealed as The Firstborn Son, the rest of mankind was, also, sealed. You are sealed with His Holy Spirit. Just as His Son was sealed with The Holy Spirit, you, too, are sealed by His Spirit, “*the anointing [spirit] which you have received of him abides in you.*” You have God’s seed “*In You.*”

You are, now, a Son of God and He no longer deals with you as a servant but as *an heir*. This is what *Galatians* tells you. His final name as Father reveals how He deals with you in a very personal way, “<sup>27</sup>*have received of him abides in you and you need not that any man teach you.*” This is because God is personally teaching and training you, “*but as the same anointing teaches you of all things [everything] and is truth and is no lie.*” The meanings that define *the seven titles* can become part of you. These include *The Covenant Keeper, The Nurturer, The Gift-giver* and *The Deliverer*. This is God’s nature and character. By choice, He chooses not to be anything else. “*And even as it has taught you, you shall abide in him.*”

**So, you abide in your Father, your Father is “*In You*” and you are One with Him. Behold, He is a wonderful, overwhelming God who gives you this *gift of life*. His Love for you makes you love Him, putting all your *faith* and *trust* in Him. Your goal is to become perfect as He is perfect!**

## Chapter 5

### GOD'S LIBRARY

Is your name written in one of The Books in God's Library? Will you be in The Kingdom of God? To learn the answer, you must go to God's Library. In God's Books, you will find the entire Plan of Salvation and who will be allowed into His *kingdom*. *The Book of Life* concerns God's plan for His creation in His *kingdom*.

Through Christ, God reveals the new heaven and the new earth. After the earthly universe has passed away and nothing physical remains, *the redeemed* will observe The New Jerusalem come down from heaven. It will be placed in its permanent location on *the new earth*.

### New Jerusalem

Revelation 21:2 And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her Husband.

New Jerusalem is presented here in the image of a Bride. She will be part of the most incredible marriage ceremony in the history of the universe. God's *word* likens this New Jerusalem to a woman (Christians, in His *church*) who will be joined in marriage to Christ, The Bridegroom. Now the question is, "*Who is going to be permitted to reside in this city?*"

Revelation 21:27 And there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that defiles, neither whatsoever works abomination or makes a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

This text shows that no one will be able to enter the new city if he is a liar, abominable or could defile it. The only ones permitted to enter this fabulous city are “*they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.*” With that declaration, everyone should sit up and take notice.

## The Books Of God

In short, the only ones permitted to enter this New Jerusalem are those who have been written in *The Book of Life* – which is *The Lamb's Book of Life*. Another Bible translation calls it *The Book of Life of The Lamb*. Remember, this book is a *biography* that will ultimately become an *autobiography*. A biography is a book that is written about someone else's life, whereas an autobiography is a book written about the author's life. This book begins as *God's Word (Old Testament)* and becomes *Christ (New Testament)*, who is *The Word of God*. Whose words are written in this book? When Christ was on this earth, He was required to live by *God's word*. He followed it so *perfectly* that He became *The Word of God* (Mark 14:49).

Revelation 1:1 <sup>1</sup>The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which God gave to him, to show to his servants things which must shortly come to pass; and he sent and signified *it* by his angel to his servant John.

Since God is not physical, *these books* are not physical.



God is *spiritual*; therefore, these *books* are *spiritual records*. It should be interesting to learn how God writes His *books* and where He stores them. Notice, it is “*The Revelation of Jesus Christ* [Jesus Christ doing the revealing] *which God gave to him.*” Christ did not write these words Himself. Rather, God, The Father informed Christ about what should be revealed. The content refers to God's *words* or The Word of God (John 5:30-38 and Deuteronomy 18:18). With this in mind, it is vital to address the following critical topic.

## Mystery Babylon

Revelation 17:5-10 <sup>5</sup>And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. <sup>6</sup>And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. <sup>7</sup>And the angel said to me, Wherefore did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns. <sup>8</sup>The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was and is not and yet is. <sup>9</sup>And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sitteth. <sup>10</sup>And there are seven kings: five are fallen and one is and the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.

The only individuals who will proceed into New Jerusalem are those who have been written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*. This book is also called *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. You learn about all the individuals who are excluded from this book (Revelation 17). It will take a certain period of time for the world-shaking events to transpire before the beast's power comes to an end. This beast will be a political system that incorporates *the false prophet* (false religion). This system will eventually be destroyed. The beast has seven heads and is mounted by a woman. One of the heads has ten crowns. In Revelation 17 and 18, you will see how this is a reference to the worldly kingdoms and a false religion. This government is satanic and incorporates many lies and falsehoods.

Specifically, the critical text in Revelation 17 reports, *"<sup>5</sup>And upon her forehead was a name written, MYSTERY, BABYLON THE GREAT, THE MOTHER OF HARLOTS AND ABOMINATIONS OF THE EARTH. <sup>6</sup>And I saw the woman drunken with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus: and when I saw her, I wondered with great admiration. <sup>7</sup>And the angel said to me, Wherefore did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and ten horns [the last ruling government just before Christ returns]. <sup>8</sup>The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition."*

## Tower Of Babel

This system is called *Babylon*. It began at The Tower of Babel under the direction of Nimrod. Later, Daniel re-

ceived prophetic inspiration about the resurrection of four heads (but totals five). One head is Babylon in Babel which is followed by four other beasts, comprising a total of five heads. One was Rome (historically) while another was, yet, to come. Revelation 17, “<sup>9</sup>*And here is the mind which has wisdom. The seven heads are seven mountains, on which the woman sits. <sup>10</sup>And there are seven kings: five are fallen [Babylon and the four beasts] and one is [one that was existing] and the other is not yet come; and when he comes, he must continue a short space.*”

When considering The 7<sup>th</sup> (or last) Head, be sure to remember the time period. (Note, this is about God's library and is not *a prophecy discussion* at this time). This is only a brief overview regarding, “<sup>8</sup>*The beast that you saw was and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was and is not and yet is.*” It is vital to recognize that the main focus is upon the individuals who are *not* written in *The Book of Life of The Lamb* from the foundation of the world. They will not be allowed into the future New Jerusalem.

## The Revealer Speaks

It is now time for The Revealer to explain. Jesus Christ, The Revealer (or Revelator), explains some important factors in *The Book of Hebrews*. He describes who is *included* and who is *excluded*.

Hebrews 1:1-5 <sup>1</sup>God, who at sundry times and in

divers manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, <sup>2</sup>Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; <sup>3</sup>Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; <sup>4</sup>Being made so much better than the angels, as he has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they. <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son?

In times past, God spoke to The Israelites through The Prophets. The last Prophet was Malachi, who lived over 400 years before *the birth* of Christ. Now, in these *last days*, as recorded in *Hebrews*, God will speak through His Son. This Son is The Revealer “*whom he has appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds.*” If God was more than One *being* (such as two or three entities), then how could God *inherit* from God, Himself? He couldn't. No one could. This notion tells you that His Son receives *an inheritance*. If God's Son receives *an inheritance*, then He had to receive *the inheritance* from another *being* – not from two or three. And yet, you are informed that God created the entire universe. How can that be? This, generally *unknown library* will tell you *The Plan of God* and how it will be accomplished.

### Brightness Of His Glory

A major point of importance concerns the statement,

**“<sup>3</sup>Who being the brightness of his glory.”** The word “glory” means “divinity” or God’s “presence.” This passage talks about His *appearance* and His *looks* and *elaborates on what He is*. Remember, in I Corinthians 15 during *the resurrection process*, all will obtain a *glory* or a *presence* of God. Christ already has a brightness that compares with The Glory of God, “...and the express image of his person...” (the word in Greek means “*charakter*” or “*character*”). Christ is *the express character* of God’s image. This is *a being* who, in His *glory*, looks like God. He has the character of God. He is The Son of God and He is an heir, “*And upholding all things by the word of his power.*” His *word* holds up the entire universe.

With Christ at the right hand of The Father, He is now responsible for all things. If He relinquished that power, the universe would suddenly disappear. There would no longer be any *electromagnetic forces*. Gravity would disappear. Nuclear forces (atoms) would fall apart and dissipate. The earth would, literally, drop. So, *the power of His word* (The Word of God) is currently sustaining this entire universe. “*When he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high* [Jesus Christ is sitting at the right hand of God, The Father upholding the whole universe]; *Being made* [Christ was made – just didn’t happen] *so much better than the angels, as he had by inheritance*” (Hebrews 1:3-4). Christ will be given *the inheritance*. That is what *an inheritance* is all about.

## Testimony Of Jesus

*The Book of Revelation* tells about *the testimony* of Jesus. A testimony is a contract based on a *promise*. He “<sup>4</sup>ob-

*tained a more excellent name than they. <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father [God speaking] and he shall be to me a Son?"* What is God's will and what does He intend to do?

I Timothy 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>I exhort therefore, that, first of all, supplications, prayers, intercessions and giving of thanks, be made for all men; <sup>2</sup>For kings and for all that are in authority; that we may lead a quiet and peaceable life in all godliness and honesty. <sup>3</sup>For this is good and acceptable in the sight of God our Saviour; <sup>4</sup>Who will have all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth. <sup>5</sup>For there is one God and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

Paul is providing instructions to Timothy about how to conduct the ministry. Furthermore, Paul is saying that there are not two, three or four but only "*one God and one mediator [Christ is The Mediator] between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.*" Notice, He is specifically called *a man*. So, how many *gods* do you count? There is only One. Christ could not have been God. Christ is The Mediator. Christ is The Son. Only God is God. Christ is The Son of God.

Hebrews 1:5-11 <sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son? <sup>6</sup>And again, when he brings in the first begotten into the world, he said, And let all the angels of God worship him. <sup>7</sup>And of the angels he

said, Who makes his angels spirits and his ministers a flame of fire. <sup>8</sup>But to the Son he said, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of your kingdom. <sup>9</sup>You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even your God, has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows: <sup>10</sup>And, You, Lord, in the beginning has laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands: <sup>11</sup>They shall perish; but you remain; and they all shall wax old as does a garment.

### A Running Commentary

God made Jesus Christ, His Son. *“<sup>5</sup>For to which of the angels said he at any time, You are my Son, this day have I begotten you? And again, I will be to him a Father and he shall be to me a Son? [Read Psalm 27 about the time before Jesus Christ was born when He was in God’s mind as The Word]. <sup>6</sup>And again, when he [God] brings in the first begotten [Christ] into the world [Christ is the first begotten] he said, And let all the angels of God worship him. <sup>7</sup>And of the angels he said, Who makes his angels spirits and his ministers a flame of fire. <sup>8</sup>But to the Son he said, Your throne, O God [The Son inherits The Godship with a throne] is for ever and ever: a scepter of righteousness is the scepter of your kingdom.”*

*These Scriptures* provide a powerful declaration. The world’s kingdoms are run like *Gentile kingdoms* from the top down. Those below serve and cater to the top. But God’s *kingdom* is The Scepter of Righteousness which serves those under it. So, likewise, *all churches* should

be administered in the same way. If a church is to follow God's way, then it must require those on the top to *serve those on the bottom*. Hebrews 1:9 states, “<sup>9</sup>*You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity; therefore God, even your God [This is The Son's God, One God] has anointed you with the oil of gladness above your fellows.*”

These *fellows* are other human beings. *The Book of Life, The Lamb's Book of Life*, is all about Christ and the rest of humanity. Jesus Christ was once human, just as you are human. You remain human but Christ was selected for a position above His *fellow man*. Then, “<sup>10</sup>*And, You, Lord, in the beginning have laid the foundation of the earth; and the heavens are the works of your hands: <sup>11</sup>They shall perish; but you remain; and they all shall wax old as does a garment.*”

## Hebrews Versus Revelation

Since The Birth of Christ, God reveals His *truth* through His Son (Hebrews). All revelation, from Christ's birth forward, comes through Jesus Christ. Prophets were *no longer needed* like they were in *The Old Testament*. *The Book of Revelation* came, only, through Christ. Since it is *an inheritance*, Christ received it from someone else. He couldn't receive it from Himself. He couldn't inherit from Himself. He received His *inheritance* from God, The Father. You already know that there is only One God. Now, who and what is this Word of God?

Revelation 6:1 And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see.



The moment just before Jesus Christ was to be sacrificed, He began to explain to The Apostles what would happen once He was crucified. Study Revelation 14, as each piece of this puzzle is vital. If you miss one piece, then you will not fully understand *God's entire plan*. Revelation 5 describes God, The Father's *throne*. "*And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals.*" Realize that The Lamb who opens the seals is The Revelator.

Revelation 5:3-5 <sup>3</sup>And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth, was able to open the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>4</sup>And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon. <sup>5</sup>And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David, has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof.

Realize that no man, regardless of where he might be placed, can open *The Book of Seven Seals*. (For further clarification, you must study Revelation 15-16 and Matthew 24). The latter text covers when Christ was asked when the end would come and about His *return*. Matthew 24 explains the series of events in sequence. The Six Seals covered that period of time. In Matthew 24, Christ revealed to The Disciples what must happen before He *returns*. Since no man can open *The Book*, you can only ask, "*Who is able to open The Book?*"

### Who Opens *The Book*?

Only a righteous and worthy man is able to open *The Book*. At a certain point in time no one could be found.

The reaction was, “<sup>4</sup>*And I wept much, because no man was found worthy to open and to read the book, neither to look thereon.* <sup>5</sup>*And one of the elders said to me, Weep not: behold, [describing the man] the Lion of the tribe of Judah, the Root of David [Christ's physical birth], has prevailed to open the book and to loose the seven seals thereof.*” Paul said that The Prophets, also, had revealed this in the past. The elder said only Jesus is worthy to open *the seals*. What did Christ do to be worthy to unseal this vital *book*? Christ had to prove Himself by overcoming a great deal. He was *the first One* to have established Himself as *worthy* to enter The Kingdom of God. He was in God's *mind* and became God's *word* (*logos*) (John 1:1). He was given God's *Spirit* at birth but Christ had to prove Himself worthy in this carnal world (in His human flesh).

Hebrews 5:7-9 <sup>7</sup>Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears to him that was able to save him from death and was heard in that he feared; <sup>8</sup>Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; <sup>9</sup>And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation to all them that obey him.

This is the period in history when Jesus Christ was a human being. This is when He appealed to God with heartfelt prayer. Christ had to become worthy in order to be placed in The Kingdom of God. This written record is called *The Book of Life of The Lamb*.

## The Beginning Of Perfection

Christ was not automatically *perfect* when He was born.

He was just as human as the rest of mankind. He had to struggle with human nature as everyone else does. Christ had to *live perfectly* and, as a consequence, He became *the author of The Book*. Christ became *The Author of Salvation*. If God wrote this book – *The Book of Life of The Lamb* – how did it become *an autobiography*? The answer is that *“It was lived by Christ.”* Do you see the difference? It was *a biography* when it started, but then it ended up as *an autobiography*. God wrote His *plan* in His *mind* (His *word*) and, then, Christ lived *those very words*. You also will need to experience the overcoming of *good over evil*. Christians are written in *The Book of Life*. One day, you will *become* The Word of God as *a witness* of Christ. As Christians, you are to become like Christ who is of God. With this process you will have *“Christ – In You”* (Colosians 1:27).

Hebrews 10:1-5 <sup>1</sup>For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. <sup>2</sup>For then would they not have ceased to be offered? Because that the worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. <sup>3</sup>But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. <sup>4</sup>For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. <sup>5</sup>Wherefore when he came into the world, he said, Sacrifice and offering you would not, but a body have you prepared me.

Who speaks to everyone in these Last Days? Who reveals everything? It is Jesus Christ. Who became *the author*

of *The Book*? It is Jesus Christ. All this is “*here a little, there a little, precept upon precept.*” The puzzle is coming together.

## Revealing The Mystery

God reveals His *mystery* through His Son Jesus. Read, study, pray and check *The Scriptures*. “<sup>1</sup>*For the law having a shadow of good things to come.*” It would be difficult if you read the last part and did not examine the entire verse. Going on, “*and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices.*” Most consider the shadows to be the sacrifices. But what is *the whole shadow*? What is *The Whole Law*?

The first five books of *The Bible* reveal Abraham being *the shadow of God*. Then, Isaac was *the shadow* of Jesus Christ. These *shadows* comprise The Word of God. *The Old and New Testaments* are *shadows* of God's word which have become *real*. Isaac said, “*Father but where is the sacrifice?*” Abraham's answer was, “*God would provide us a sacrifice.*” “<sup>3</sup>*But in those sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. <sup>4</sup>For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins. Wherefore when he comes into the world [Jesus came into the world], he said, Sacrifice and offering you would not, but a body have you prepared me.*”

Abraham is *The Father of The Faithful* because when his son, Isaac, said, “*Where are we going to get the sacrifice?*” Abraham said, “*God will give us the sacrifice.*” Abraham knew about this as it was written in God's library in *The Book of Life of The Lamb* (Hebrews 10:5).

## God's Library

Understand that Abraham, Moses and David knew that God had *a library with the complete story of eternal life*. This included the details of who would be allowed into His *kingdom*. *These books*, however, are not codices. They were not written in the same manner as physical books. And, they are not scrolls that are written on papyrus. Where do you think God stored all these books? The Word of God is written in *His mind* because in *His mind* is The Word of God (John 1:1).

Hebrews 10:6-9 <sup>6</sup>In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me,) to do your will, O God. <sup>8</sup>Above when he said, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and offering for sin you would not, neither had pleasure therein; which are offered by the law; <sup>9</sup>Then said he, Lo, I come to do your will, O God. He takes away the first, that he may establish the second [The Covenants].

This is a reference to the text of a certain book. The book specifies that, "*In burnt offerings and sacrifices for sin you have had no pleasure. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) [of this body Christ] to do your will, O God.*" When reading the full text above, you will understand the basis for this statement, <sup>9</sup>"*He takes away the first, that he may establish the second.*"

God changed the sacrifice (a shadow) from sacrificing animals by providing *the body of Christ* (The Word became *real*) as the sacrifice for all mankind.

John 1:1-4 <sup>1</sup>In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and the Word was God. <sup>2</sup>The same was in the beginning with God. <sup>3</sup>All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. <sup>4</sup>In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

*The Word* appeared long before He was Christ. “<sup>1</sup>*In the beginning was The Word*” (*The Book of John*). Believe exactly what it says. Don't try to make anything up. The word is “*logos*.” “*Logos*” means “*word*” or “*divine word*.” The text continues, “*and the Word was with God and The Word was God*.”

## The One God

How many Gods are there? The answer is, “*One God*” (I Timothy 2:5). Whose *word* was this? It is God's *word*, because it is stated, “<sup>2</sup>*The same was in the beginning with God*.” What was in the beginning? It was His *word*. Jesus Christ had to become *the author of that word* by becoming worthy. Christ had to do everything that was written in *The Book*, “<sup>3</sup>*All things were made by him* [by God's Word]; *and without him was not any thing made that was made*. <sup>4</sup>*In him was life; and the life was the light of men*.” This is a clear reference to Jesus Christ (who became God's word or The Word of God).

I Corinthians 10:1-4 <sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I would not that you should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud and all passed through the sea; <sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea; <sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat; <sup>4</sup>And

did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ.

Who was with Israel during this entire course of events? The text of I Corinthians 10:1 shows that His *word* is in one of God's books (but not in *The Holy Bible*). It is *The Book of Life of The Lamb*. “<sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I would not that you should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud.” In *Exodus*, you find that *the cloud* was *the shekinah*, “and all passed through the sea; <sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses.” The baptism of Moses was the baptism of circumcision or *The Works of The Law*. In addition, there was, also, the baptism of John, which was *the baptism of repentance*. So, there are two completely different baptisms.

## Baptism In The Sea

Some Christians, today, still think they are in the baptism under Moses doing *The Works of The Law*. “<sup>2</sup>And were all baptized to Moses in the cloud and in the sea; <sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat.” They ate the physical food, *manna*. However, this is about *spiritual food* and Christ said that you had to *eat His body* and *drink His blood*. This is His *Word*. “<sup>3</sup>And did all eat the same spiritual meat; <sup>4</sup>And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them.” And who was *the spiritual rock*? “And that Rock was Christ.” *This Rock followed* them. It was not leading them like the angel. So you only have One God. You have The Word of God, who was God's Word (or God). *This spiritual Rock* following Moses was The Word of God who became *Christ*. Christ

was not born until thousands of years later. The Word of God became Christ's *Word* (Deuteronomy 18:18). The only place you can find *these Words* is in God's *library*.

Psalm 40:1-8 <sup>1</sup>I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. <sup>2</sup>He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock and established my goings. <sup>3</sup>And he has put a new song in my mouth, even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD. <sup>4</sup>Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. <sup>5</sup>Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works which you have done and your thoughts which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered. <sup>6</sup>Sacrifice and offering you did not desire; mine ears have you opened: burnt offering and sin offering have you not required. <sup>7</sup>Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me, <sup>8</sup>I delight to do your will, O my God: yes, your law is within my heart.

David understood *the prophecy* about Christ. David knew that he had to be worthy and become *perfect*. In *Psalms*, David's enemies *surrounded* him and he had to look to God and call upon Him for protection.

## Waiting Patiently On God

David is praying about Jesus Christ and explaining what Christ will be going through. Psalm 40:1 says, "*I waited*



*patiently for the LORD.*” You must wait patiently for *the return of Christ*, also. “*And he inclined to me and heard my cry* [his prayers]. <sup>2</sup>*He brought me up also out of an horrible pit* [The Lake of Fire] *out of the miry clay and set my feet, upon a rock and established my goings.*” I Corinthians 10 confirms that *the rock* is Christ or God’s word. After you read how David should live, you now enter sensitive territory. Read very carefully from here on because each word becomes *golden* and your Salvation depends upon it. The Psalmist declares, “<sup>3</sup>*And he has put a new song in my mouth.*” A new song was read in *Revelation*. The saints of God sing this new song, “*Even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD.*”

Then, the subject points to *the resurrection*, “<sup>4</sup>*Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respecteth not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies.*” The liars will go into The Lake of Fire. Think this over and over until you fully understand it. “<sup>5</sup>*Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works.*”

This is talking about God, “*which you have done and your thoughts* [God’s thoughts] *which are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.*” This applies to all humanity. These are *the riches* “*In Christ*” (God’s words or thoughts). In Verse 6, you read about God’s thoughts. His *many wonderful works* are all about you. The Apostle Paul interpreted them in his Epistle. “*Sacrifice and offering you did not desire; mine ears have you opened: burnt offering and sin offering have you not required.* <sup>7</sup>*Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me*” (Hebrews 10:5-9).

## Blotted Out Of The Book

Christ said, “*<sup>8</sup>I delight to do your will, O my God: yea, your law is within my heart.*” So these are God’s words that are written in *The Book*. In Hebrews 10, you read the same thing. In His *Book* are God’s words (His *mind* as *thoughts*). “*In the beginning was the word. And the word was with God.*” This is God’s word and The Word was God. Jesus Christ became the author of this book by becoming *worthy* and *doing everything written in that book*.

Exodus 32:31-34 <sup>31</sup>And Moses returned to the LORD and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin and have made them gods of gold. <sup>32</sup>Yet now, if you will forgive their sin—; and if not, blot me, I pray you, out of your book which you have written. <sup>33</sup>And the LORD said to Moses, Whosoever has sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. <sup>34</sup>Therefore now go, lead the people to the place of which I have spoken to you: behold, mine Angel shall go before you: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.

Compare Exodus 32 and Psalm 40 after Israel had created the golden calf. “*<sup>31</sup>Moses returned to the LORD and said, Oh, this people have sinned a great sin and have made them gods of gold. <sup>32</sup>Yet now, if you will forgive their sin—; and if not, blot me, I pray you, out of your book which you have written.*” Then, God conveys the following message, “*<sup>33</sup>And the LORD said to Moses, Whosoever has sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book. <sup>34</sup>Therefore now go, lead the people to the place of which I have spoken to you: behold, mine Angel shall go before you: nevertheless in the day when I visit I will visit their sin upon them.*”

## The Shekinah Glory

This was an angel. It wasn't another god (Acts 7:30). Remember that *the rock* followed Israel. But, the angel *led* Israel. It wasn't Christ as *another being*. That was the reason The Jews began using the name "*shekinah*." It was because Israel knew and understood that God was not in *the temple*.

As *a being*, God was not in The Holy of Holies. It was what they called "*the shekinah*." This Hebrew word has the root, "*shakan*" which means "*a glorious place to dwell*" along with "*God's presence*" or "*the dwelling place of God's presence*." The Glory of God was *the presence* of God. God, *the being*, was not there. *Christ*, as God's *word* or God's *presence*, was positioned there. *The shekinah*, God's *glory* or His *Word* by The Holy Spirit, was The One *who became Christ*. This *special power* was in *the temple*. The story comes together perfectly. *Christ was never in existence before He was born as a human being*.

The Word of God is just what it says it is – God's *word*. God wrote in His book from His *thoughts* and from His *mind*. This is *a spiritual book* called *The Lamb's Book of Life*. Christ was written in *that book* and, believe it or not, if you follow Christ, you, also, are *written* in that book.

Psalm 139:1-16 <sup>1</sup>O LORD, you have searched me and known me. <sup>2</sup>You know my downsitting and mine uprising, you understand my thought afar off. <sup>3</sup>You compassed my path and my lying down and are acquainted with all my ways. <sup>4</sup>For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O LORD, you know it altogether.

<sup>5</sup>You have beset me behind and before and laid thine hand upon me. <sup>6</sup>Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain to it. <sup>7</sup>Whither shall I go from your spirit? Or whither shall I flee from your presence? <sup>8</sup>If I ascend up into heaven, you are there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, you are there. <sup>9</sup>If I take the wings of the morning and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; <sup>10</sup>Even there shall your hand lead me and your right hand shall hold me. <sup>11</sup>If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. <sup>12</sup>Yea, the darkness hides not from you; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to you. <sup>13</sup>For you have possessed my reins: you have covered me in my mother's womb. <sup>14</sup>I will praise you: for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are your works; and that my soul knoweth right well. <sup>15</sup>My substance was not hid from you, when I was made in secret and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. <sup>16</sup>Your eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in your book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.

This is speaking about David and explaining what God is thinking about in His *mind* or *thoughts*. He knows when you get up and when you lie down and He knows all your *thoughts*. Christ told you that God knows when two sparrows fall and, then, explains that you are worth more than two sparrows. In the absolute sense, no one can get away from God's *Spirit*, "<sup>7</sup>*Whither shall I go from your spirit?*" God's *Spirit* keeps Him informed. "<sup>7</sup>*Whither shall I flee from your presence? <sup>8</sup>If I ascend up into heaven. <sup>9</sup>If I take the wings to the uttermost parts of the sea* [God is there];

*<sup>10</sup>your hands lead me, <sup>11</sup>the darkness shall cover me, [there is no place where you can hide from God or His Spirit] <sup>13</sup>you have covered me in my mother's womb. <sup>14</sup>I will praise you; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvelous are your works; and that my soul know right well. <sup>15</sup>My substance [what I'm really made of] was not hid from you, when I was made in secret and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. <sup>16</sup>Your eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect [not made as a human yet] and in your book all my members were written."*

## The Body's Design

God's *book* shows the design of the human body, "*which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them.*" How long ago did God know you? He knew you from *the beginning*. He knew every part of you and every other person He has created. He knew exactly how you were going to be made and how you would look. God knew about His Son, Jesus Christ, because He was, also, written in *that same book*. "*The Word of God,*" which was in the beginning, means "*God's word as it was written.*" It was God's *thoughts* written into *words*. How was Christ, *the author* (or the first One), going to be worthy in The Kingdom of God?

Luke 1:31-35 <sup>31</sup>And, behold, you shall conceive in your womb and bring forth a son and shall call him Jesus. <sup>32</sup>He shall be great and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and the LORD God shall give to him the throne of his father David: <sup>33</sup>And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end. <sup>34</sup>Then said Mary to the angel,

How shall this be, seeing I know not a man? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.

At Christ's birth, *this Noble Being* had something residing within Him that the rest of mankind *did not possess*. <sup>34</sup>*Then said Mary to the angel, How shall this be, seeing I know not a man [she was a virgin]? <sup>35</sup>And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you.* This is a very simple point of evidence that proves The Holy Spirit isn't another person (or *a being*). A question you should ask yourself is, *"How can The Holy Spirit be given to someone and then become another person?"* That would be possession and only demons possess. So, The Holy Spirit is just God's *Spirit*.

## The Holy Wind

The word *"holy"* in Greek means *"blameless"* or *"righteous."* The word *"spirit"* in Greek is *"pneuma."* What is *pneuma*? Have you heard of pneumatics? *"Pneuma"* means *"wind."* This is *a righteous wind*, which came upon Mary. You know that *wind is energy*. *This righteous energy* came upon Mary, <sup>35</sup>*and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you: therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.* Why is He called The Son of God? Did He exist as God before His birth? Absolutely not! This is because God's Holy Spirit was upon Mary and *the very presence* (divinity) or *power* of God (as with Adam) caused Jesus Christ's birth. God's Holy Spirit made Him God's living *word*. That is, also,

why Christ was *the rock* who followed The Israelites. It is because He was written in *The Book* in God's *mind*. Christ was *the rock* in God's *mind* until He was born. Everything fits. What is *the purpose* of The Holy Spirit? "*Christ was going to give a comforter*" (John 14). "*And that comforter does guide you into all truth*" (John 16:13). When God gave Christ His Holy Spirit at birth, it guided Him as He became aware that He was The Son of God. Jesus had been performing everything that The Word of God wrote in *The Book of God* in the library of His *own mind*! "*Lo, I come in the volume it is written of me*" (Psalm 40:7).

For Christ to be The Word of God, He had to fulfill all *The Scriptures* (Mark 14:49). The Holy Spirit writes that *the word* would become Christ. In *The Book of Revelation*, Christ became The Word of God. He was God's *word* from His human birth. He was everything that was in God's *mind* along with The Power of The Holy Spirit. Christ was in God's *express image* (Hebrews 1). God reproduced Himself in His Son, Jesus and will reproduce Himself "*In You*" (I Corinthians 15:28).

### Let This Mind Be "*In You*"

All the marvelous *works* that God created "*In Christ*" (eventually, in all mankind) were always in God's *thoughts*. When God gives His *Spirit* to you, you become His *word*. Hence, you have *The Very Mind of God*, "*Let this mind be in you which was also in Christ Jesus*" (Philippians 2:5).

Why did God do this? It is because it gives God pleasure to reproduce Himself and He is the maximum *giver of all*.

**Ephesians 1:1-12** <sup>1</sup>Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the saints which are at Ephesus and to the faithful in Christ Jesus: <sup>2</sup>Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ. <sup>3</sup>Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ: <sup>4</sup>According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will: <sup>12</sup>That we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.

**Paul tells about Jesus Christ and what happens to Christians, “<sup>1</sup>Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God.” This was not because Christ was God before His birth. This is by God’s will. What God wills in His thoughts is written in His Book. “By the will of God, to the saints**



*which are at Ephesus and to the faithful in Christ Jesus. <sup>2</sup>Grace be to you and peace, from God our Father and from the Lord Jesus Christ [The Master]. <sup>3</sup>Blessed be the God and Father [One God] of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ.”*

These are heavenly blessings and *not works of The Law*. They are not pagan rituals but heavenly blessings! “<sup>4</sup>According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.” The emphasis is upon the vital word “love.” In the word “*agapè*,” the love of *mankind*, is in The Mind of Christ. This thought continues with, “<sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us to the adoption of children.” The Greek word for “predestinated” means not only “predestined” as He made you, but, also, that He “foreknew” this. God planned it that way and wrote it in His *Book*.

## Adoption Or Sonship

The sense of this teaching does not include “*adoption*” as it is understood in the English language. This is because if you are going to become *one* of God's children. You are literally *one of His children!* When you are born, you are human. When you are *Spirit*, you are one of His children. It is true that you, being human, are not yet God's *son*; but, when you become *a Spirit Being* (a Son of God), then you will have God “*In You*.” As a result, you (as human beings) are *adopted* to become Spirit Beings like God and finally become Sons of God. Originally you came from a human father – but now, you come from God's spirit, “*by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of*

*his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption [speaking of Christ] through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace: <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence; <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will [God's will is to save the world], according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself."*

*This element is not found within other beings. It was not "In Christ" as The Word before He became Christ. The words "In Himself" correlates with I Corinthians 15:29 where He purposed it "In Himself." "In the beginning was God" (John 1:1). "<sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times He might gather together in one all things in Christ." The Book of Life of The Lamb is in The Book of Life because Christ is "In You." Christ proved Himself worthy even though He was tempted, just as all Christians are. Christ became the author of The Book of Life. It was His autobiography. Christ subdued every enemy (I Corinthians 15). At that time, He turned everything over to The Father because everything was "In Christ." This would mean that God would have totally reproduced Himself. "<sup>10</sup>Both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance." The implications are astounding.*

## The Same Inheritance

In this process, you get *the same inheritance* that Jesus received because you will be "In Christ." That is a *key point*. In short, you are "One" with Christ and with The Father. *The inheritance* that The Father gave to His Son,

you, as a Christian, will also share in that same *glory*. “*An inheritance, being predestinated* [predetermined and written in that *Book of Life*] *according to the purpose of him who works all things after* [what?] *the counsel of his own will: that we should be to the praise of his glory, who first trusted in Christ.*” That is why *The Word of God* was God as He *counseled* with *Himself*. Who has considered this important aspect?

Malachi 3:13-16 <sup>13</sup>Your words have been stout against me, said the LORD. Yet you say, What have we spoken so much against you? <sup>14</sup>You have said, It is vain to serve God: and what profit is it that we have kept his ordinance and that we have walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts? <sup>15</sup>And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered. <sup>16</sup>Then they that feared the LORD spoke often one to another: and the LORD hearkened and heard it and a book of remembrance was written before him for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name.

*The Book of Malachi* relates the sufferings of *the saints*. There are two types of people. One type is saying, “*Why should I serve God? The wicked are blessed. It doesn't seem to do any good to serve God.*” “<sup>13</sup>*Your words have been stout against me, said the LORD.*” The other type knows the distinct advantage in serving The Living God.

## Book Of Remembrance

God speaks about the people who say it doesn't do any good to serve Him. This was covered in Chapter 4. Pick

up that story with the words, <sup>16</sup>“*Then they that feared the LORD.*” This refers to, “*many shall fear and turn to trust in The LORD*” (Psalm 40:3).

The more complete text reads, <sup>16</sup>“*Then they that feared the LORD spoke often to one another [Christian to Christian]: And the LORD hearkened and heard it and a Book of Remembrance was written before him [before God, that is] for them that feared the LORD and that thought upon his name.*” The *Book of Life of The Lamb* is complete. Not only does it contain the full story about Jesus but it, also, chronicles God as *The Word* who became Christ at birth. It was then that He became worthy as *The Author of Salvation*. As you can see, through Christ, Christians have the same *inheritance*.

As a Christian, everything you do, everything you think and everything you say is written in *The Book*. God is writing everything in *The Book*. It will not be used against you but to remember what you *went through* to become like Him. Everyone who is written in *The Book of Life* will be in The Kingdom of God. Christ was the first to qualify and The Christians whose names are in *The Book* will *inherit* all things. Christians will, like Christ, become The Sons of God and be The Bride of Christ in The Kingdom of God.

## Chapter 6

### GOD'S MIND REVEALED

*The Bible* tells one continuous story from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22. Dozens of scribes over thousands of years have been faithfully recording this historic account. The principal reason Christians do not understand *The Bible*, as one continuous story, is because they read *The Bible* in segments.

Many Christians read only *The Old Testament*, while others merely study *The New Testament*. Still others read just *The Proverbs*, *Psalms* and various *isolated* chapters. When *The Bible* is properly displayed as one continuous story, then God reveals His mind to you. *The Holy Bible* is God's mind and is revealed as God's word – or The Word of God.

II Timothy 3:16 All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.

The Greek translation for the word “*inspired*” means “*God breathed.*” *The entire Bible* is His “*breath*” or “*word*” which He gives to Christians in a written form. Before anything existed, God pre-ordained everything and this was written down in His *spiritual library*. *This library* was not composed of physical books but *spiritual books*. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is a book about marriage. It is a marriage directory or a marriage registry. It tells you the

identity of *The Groom* and *The Bride*. It also lists all of *The Guests* in the register (*The Lamb's Book of Life*).

## The Righteous Book

God, also, has a *Book of Remembrance*, in which He writes everything down. He remembers everything that happened in the past as well as what happens in the present and what will happen in the future. *These books represent The Mind of God, His thoughts, His purpose and His plan.* You can investigate God's *mind* as it is revealed in your *Bible*. When God reveals His *mind* and *thoughts*, He is giving you the totality of His *plan* and His *purpose*. From the time of Genesis 1 until The Prophets, God spoke directly through *an angel* to Adam and Eve and the prophets. As this continuous flowing story unfolds, you will begin to see how to put an almost complete puzzle together.

When you do, it will enable you to understand how to study The Word of God. Then, you will understand The Mystery of God. The Apostle John received the revelation of Christ on The Isle of Patmos. It was about events to occur in The Last Days. Chapter 4 discloses a unique picture of God, His *throne* and *the twenty-four elders* bowing down to Him.

Revelation 4:11 You are worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for you have created all things and for your pleasure they are and were created.

Psalm 40:7 Then said I, Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me,

*The thoughts of God are for your good. The Word was with God and The Word was God. This word became Christ and was the complete predestination in God's mind.*

## Who Created Everything

Throughout *The Bible*, God tells you that Christ *created* all things. Romans 1 explains that The Father created everything. The twenty-four elders report that Christ is worthy of all honor and all power because God created all things. So it was God, The Father, who created everything. The Mind of God, His thoughts, became *The Word*, who, in turn, became Christ. It was Christ, who from the womb, was filled with God's Spirit. He *became The Word of God*. All that God had predestined in His mind became Christ. A very significant verse is found in Revelation 4, which says, "<sup>11</sup>*And for your pleasure, they are and were created.*" When God made everything, He made it for His pleasure. This Greek word for "*pleasure*" could mean "*one's will*" or "*desire,*" but it, also, means "*choice.*"

It was His *free will* or His *choice*, which gave Him *pleasure*, to create everything.

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

After Jesus Christ conquers all enemies and finally conquers death, He *returns* all authority back to God, The Father. But why? Could it be for God to become *all and in all*? Indeed, God is *all* and God is *in all things*.

## God Is All

The entire universe is God. Everything you look at is God, because without God, there is absolutely nothing. Not only is everything God, but at the end, God will be in everyone. You will be *one* with Him. When Christ became *The Word* in the flesh, there was no need for The Prophets. Malachi was the last Prophet recorded in *The Bible*. God speaks to each individual through His Son in the last days (Hebrews 1:2). God used The Prophets to speak to the people in an attempt to bring them in line with His *purpose*. The Prophets in *The Old Testament* relayed The Word. In *The New Testament*, Christ speaks to Christians directly. Both *The Old* and *The New Testament* comprise the entire Word of God. Through scribes, some of God's library was physically recorded for all mankind to experience.

Prophets may be used to foretell things in the future, but they will never be used by God to bring you to Christ. Who can help bring a person to Christ? It is The Church – His *Body*. You are to become *One* with God, as Christ is *one* with The Father. In Christ, you become *One* with The Father by becoming *The Word of God*. In *Revelation*, read the description of Christ's *throne*. He is *The One* worthy to *unleash the seals of the little book* and His name is *The Word of God* (Revelation 19:13).

*As a witness* – or *an ambassador* of Jesus – you are *an example* of The Word of God. This Word became a physical book when God no longer dealt with just one person such as with Abraham. God was addressing The Nation of Israel – specifically, *The 12 Tribes of Israel*. It was Moses'



responsibility to record all that God told him. *The Word was transferred to The Holy Scriptures as an unblemished account of God's mind.*

## Seven Elements

*The Bible discloses seven important elements. You will begin to understand how God thinks.*

### Creation

The first element is *creation* itself. God created everything by His own free choice. It was for His pleasure.

### Reproduction

There is Godly *reproduction* and, then, there is Satanic *reproduction*. In one of Christ's parables, the whole world was given *The Seed* which was God's *word*. In planting The Seed or God's *word*, there were thorns and weeds also.

*“<sup>27</sup>Sir, did not you sow good seed in your field? From whence then has it tares?”* *“<sup>38</sup>The tares are the children of the wicked one”* (Matthew 13). So, Satan has produced children by means of his own deception, which is counterfeit to God's *purpose* of reproducing Himself. A *similar scripture* notes God's *purpose*, *“<sup>28</sup>And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him that God may be all in all”* (I Corinthians 15). This shows that God is *procreating* Himself. To understand God's *mind*, you must first know who God is. The chapters *Who Is God?* and *God's*

*Character And Personality*, along with *The Scriptures*, will prepare you for the next piece of the puzzle.

## Who Is Good?

You know that God is Holy, unblemished, perfect, fair, just and without flaw. God is *righteous* and does only what is *right* and *good*. He never makes a mistake. Christ said, “*Why call you me good? There is none good but one, that is, God*” (Matthew 19:17). He doesn't let the wicked get away with anything. Often, you may think that the wicked are not punished for their offenses. But what they sow, they shall also reap. Ultimately, God is love or *agàpè*. Never forget that “*agàpè*” is “*intellectual, moral love.*” *Agàpè* love consists of such *a great amount of caring* that you give your own life in the fulfillment of it. In Greek, there is also “*eros*,” which means “*passion*” or “*emotion*,” and “*philia*,” which means “*friendly*,” “*sociable*” or “*compatible.*” When man sinned, *agàpè* was lost, leaving only *eros* and *philia*. There are so many divorces today because people marry for *an eros* and *philia* type of love.

If couples married for *agàpè* (which takes time), long-term marriages would result. The intellectual and moral love people would have for each other would allow them to become one flesh. They would be willing to give their lives for each other. Divorces increased because *agàpè* is not a part of these physical unions. The one ingredient of God, which stands out in reproducing Himself, is *the gift of free choice*. You may ask, “*Why didn't He make everyone perfect in the beginning? Why must one go through all these trials?*” You had to be given free choice or else you would have been a robot.

If mankind were made perfect in the beginning, there would have been no free choice. God's *plan* to reproduce Himself had to be designed perfectly, so that you would ultimately become a Son of God just like Christ. If you had not been given free choice, then God would not be reproducing Himself. God has total free choice and so do you. You have a choice to become like God! God needed to have you learn to have *total faith* and *trust* in Him. By this Godly reverence, *an eternal kingdom* can exist which will have everlasting joy and peace.

## Inheritance

Since God is reproducing Himself "*In You*," inheritance is *a gift*. You would never be able to earn it. *Inheritance* is *a gift*, but it is much, much more.

Ephesians 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

To whom does he bow? It is to "*the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.*" So *this inheritance* is clearly *a gift*. However, as far back as Adam and Eve, little by little, too many turned to worshipping the things God created instead of worshipping *The Creator*. Why would anyone want to worship the sun, stars or any image and call them "*gods?*" God created everything in this universe, so why in the world would those objects be *worshipped as gods?* The whole story hinges on creation, Godly reproduction and inheritance. *An inheritance* is *an unearned gift* that is passed on from a loving father to his children.

Matthew 19:3-6 <sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female. <sup>5</sup>And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they two shall be one flesh? <sup>6</sup>Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.

## Marriage

Which type of marriage is acceptable to God?

<sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he who made them at the beginning made them male and female.

God instituted the first marriage with Adam, as a type of Christ. Adam had his chance to become The Savior of The World. When Adam was created, God declared that He created both male and female. God is dominantly male and looks like a male. But, He has the female DNA within Him. So, when God produced a male and a female, He was reproducing Himself. By making them *male* and *female*, God created them as *one*. Jesus attempts to explain how you can take something that was *one* (Marriage) and tear it apart (Divorce). You cannot do this. If you do, then the union dies. Jesus said, “<sup>5</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife:*

*and they two shall be one flesh* [how they were made in the beginning]? *Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder.*” So what was lost in The Garden of Eden? It was God's type of marriage. God's marriage was lost in The Garden of Eden because, originally, Adam and Eve were one flesh and there was *agàpè love*. Why was it an *agàpè* type of love?

Ephesians 5:28-29 <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church.

Adam and Eve had *an agàpè* union. They could have had *an agàpè* love or God's love but *agàpè* love was lost. How should wives and husbands conduct themselves in a Godly marriage? The answer is, “<sup>28</sup>*So ought men to love their wives* [how?] *as their own bodies* [Adam and Eve were of the same body]. *He that loves his wife loves himself.*”

Adam and Eve, having the same body, were *one*. “<sup>29</sup>*For no man ever yet hated his own flesh.*” Do you wonder why it is hard for men to say “no” to a wife? A husband may want something else and may hint at it, but usually he will go along with her idea. Notice, “<sup>29</sup>*For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church.*” God's marriage is so completely different from the world's type of marriage. Adam could not *fail to love his wife*. Why? It is because she came out of him. *Marriage* is the fourth element. You are to become *One* with God.

## Restoration

The fifth element is *restoration*. Agàpè was lost. Notice the first thing that God did when He created the heaven and the earth. In Genesis 1, “<sup>3</sup>God said, *Let there be light.*” Before light, there was darkness on the earth. God said, “*the light was good.*” Nothing is said about the darkness. In I John 1, it states, “<sup>5</sup>*God is light and in Him is no darkness at all.*” So God was creating an earth, a universe and a mixture of both light and dark. To be like God, there can be no darkness in you – only total light. God was revealing Himself, His *mind* and how He *thinks* during The Six Days of Creation. He created a world that is a mixture of *good* and *evil*, *light* and *dark* – and it has been this way from the very beginning. After those six days, God declared that light was good. He put the greater light to rule the day and the lesser light to rule the night. He created the moon so that it would never be totally dark. Then the people, forgetting God, The Creator, began *worshipping* the *sun* and the *moon*. In *Revelation*, “*the sun*” is the picture of The Father and “*the moon*” is the picture of The Bride, or the wife who reflects the light of The Father (the sun). People started worshipping *the creation* itself. They knew more than many Christians do today.

Romans 1:20 For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse.

Notice the words, “<sup>20</sup>*For the invisible things of him...are clearly seen.*” These are invisible laws of electromagnetism (refer to Chapter 1, *Is God Real?*). The sun, the

moon, the light, the darkness, male, female and all the animals reveal God. There is not enough time to recount how God's *mind* is revealed through His *creation*. The Six Days of Creation reveal *the power* and *the magnificent Plan of God*. God is reproducing Himself. In the spring season, there is *the resurrection* aspect. In the summer, there is growth, and then in the fall, one gains maturity. Finally, in the winter season, there is snow. When one dies, sin has been paid for. The whiteness is *the righteousness* which will come up in *the resurrection*. *The righteous ones* are clothed in white. The seasons portray *the resurrection* and *the life cycle*. The whole life cycle of humanity reveals God. The entire agricultural harvest season reveals God. And people ask the question, "*Why doesn't God show Himself?*" Open your eyes to see God revealed through His *creation*!

## Redemption

The sixth element is *redemption*. This is the underlying theme of *the entire Bible* and is the basis for the release of the human spirit into freedom. Release is what accompanies *redemption* and is an integral part of the process. This is the only pure form of freedom that is found exclusively in The Truth of God.

## The Kingdom Of God

The seventh element is *The Kingdom of God*. This is the ultimate accomplishment in the redemption process. It is *the goal* of God's *entire plan*. These seven elements will bring you much closer to fully understanding how God *thinks*.

## Why Did God Make The Angels?

Hebrews 1:14 Are they not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?

Paul said that Christ was higher than *the angels* and that He was made better than they. Therefore, what was the reason for *the angels*? “*Are they* [the angels] *not all ministering spirits, sent forth to* [do what?] *minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?*” The only reason God created the angelic kingdom (which includes Satan) was for you and His *plan*. It is God reproducing Himself “*In You!*” “*And the Father himself, which has sent me, has borne witness of me. You have neither heard his voice at any time, nor seen his shape*” (John 5:37). Why can't God reveal Himself to you or show Himself to the world? Be mindful of Chapter 11 entitled *The Lake of Fire*. You will find that all mankind would burn up. God had to create *beings* (angels) as messengers who could convey what He wanted done.

In *The Book of Revelation*, you find that before the new heaven and new earth, the universe is burned up. So God had to create *angels* to protect humans from being consumed. *The angels* can manifest themselves as human beings. So God did not reveal Himself from the beginning because humans would have been consumed. Do you remember what happened at Mount Sinai to the ancient Israelites? That wasn't God. Moses said that he spoke to God face-to-face. Did he? Well, someone is a liar. If Moses spoke to God *face-to-face*, then Jesus Christ lied. Jesus Christ said that no man has heard or seen The Father.



**Well, who is it that Moses spoke to, if it wasn't God?**

**Acts 7:29-30** <sup>29</sup>Then fled Moses at this saying and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons. <sup>30</sup>And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.

Israel and Judah knew all this, but today no one seems to know it. Even theologians fight over this identity. Who was *the rock*? Who was *The Word*? Who appeared in the burning bush? Who gave Moses *The Ten Commandments*? Stephen, the first deacon, who eventually became an evangelist, was stoned and killed in the end. In *The Book of Acts*, Stephen said, “<sup>29</sup>*Then fled Moses at this saying and was a stranger in the land of Madian, where he begat two sons*” (Acts 7). When Moses arrived in The Land of Madian, who did he confront? Remember, his wife said that it was The Mount of God. He went in front of a bush.

### **Voice From The Bush**

“<sup>30</sup>*And when forty years were expired, there appeared to him in the wilderness of Mount Sinai [what?] an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush.*” The voice out of the bush said, “<sup>33</sup>*Put off your shoes from your feet for the place where you stand is holy ground [Moses believed he was talking to God].*” It wasn't God, The Father – it was *an angel*. Christ told *the truth*. No man has ever heard God's voice.

**Acts 7:53** Who have received the law by the disposition of angels and have not kept it.

It refers to the giving of *The Ten Commandments* along with *The Whole Law*. According to *Exodus*, *The Ten Commandments* were put directly into *the ark* (the mercy seat). *The Book of The Law* was placed in the side of *the ark*. Who actually gave it to Moses? “<sup>53</sup>*Who have received the law by [who?] the disposition of angels and have not kept it.*” God had to create *angels* in the beginning because this was the only way they could become *the messengers* who speak in place of God. Moses wanted to know what to tell Pharaoh. He told him to say, “*I AM sent you.*” The angel was speaking in the third person, in God’s place. God thought of everything and it all makes sense. God required His *angels* (messengers) to inform mankind of His *plan*. God was revealing Himself. God revealed Himself through *the physical creation* (Romans 1:20).

### Ambassador Of *The Word*

It was *a special angel* who spoke as *an ambassador* in the place of *The Word of God* (Acts 7). He is *the angel* of *The Lord*, representing God. God built the angelic kingdom so that the angels could be *the messengers*.

Ephesians 1:4-11 <sup>4</sup>According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and without blame before him in love: <sup>5</sup>Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to the good pleasure of his will, <sup>6</sup>To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved. <sup>7</sup>In whom we have redemption through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace; <sup>8</sup>Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;

<sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him: <sup>11</sup>In whom also we have obtained an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after the counsel of his own will.

You will need some background information to understand this magnificent story. “*4According* [talking about God] *as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world* [God thought of all this before there was a universe], *that we should be holy and without blame before him in love.*” What is this? It is *an agàpè* type of love.

God is literally duplicating Himself. But first, He allows free choice. All that God is and does is according to His pleasure and of His own free choice. “*5Having predestinated us to the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself, according to* [what?] *The good pleasure of his will,* *6To the praise of the glory of his grace, wherein he has made us accepted in the beloved.* *7In whom we have* [what?] *redemption.*” This is the sixth element which was discussed earlier.

Later, you will understand why you have to be *redeemed*. It is specified as you continue with the text, “*through his blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;* *8Wherein he has abounded toward us in all wisdom and prudence;* *9Having made known to us the mystery of his will.*” He kept it secret from most, but He has been dis-

closing it *little by little*, over a period of time. He only reveals to each of you what *you are able to understand* (never too much) in order to be *saved*. Every person, in his/her own sequence “*according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>1</sup>In whom also we have obtained [what?] an inheritance, being predestinated according to the purpose of him who works all things after His counsel.*”

### God's Counsel

Who does He counsel with? He counsels with Himself “*of his own will.*” If, in the beginning, all this was thought out and He wrote it in *The Spiritual Books* of His *mind*, then who else would there be to counsel with? There was no one. This whole plan reveals God's *mind* only.

Genesis 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>Thus the heavens and the earth were finished and all the host of them. <sup>2</sup>And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. <sup>3</sup>And God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. <sup>4</sup>These are the generations of the heavens and of the earth when they were created, in the day that the LORD God made the earth and the heavens.

This shows the purpose of The Sabbath. The Sabbath is the picture of God's rest when He finished all His *physical creation* – but not His *spiritual creation*. Christ said that in the beginning, marriage was not the way it is today (Matthew 19). When Adam and Eve sinned, they could no longer be in *Paradise*. “<sup>3</sup>*And God blessed the seventh day*

*and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made.”* You don't need a Tree of Life if you have already been created *spiritually* (in the beginning) in the likeness of God.

Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden. They were complete in God's *rest*. Everything they needed or wanted was provided (Genesis 3). But all was lost. God's type of marriage was lost (Matthew 19). They couldn't be reproduced as God's Sons, so they lost *the inheritance*. However, creation, reproduction, inheritance and marriage still continued.

## God's Mind Revealed

As reinforced throughout this book, God's story reveals His *mind*. His *mind* and *thoughts* are The Word of God. Think about the lack of concern Adam and Eve had: 1) they didn't worry about food and 2) they were vegetarians. They didn't eat meat but neither did the animals. There were no carnivorous animals. They had, then, what people will have in The Millennium. The lion is going to lie down with the lamb. During the first seven days, all the herbs and all the fruit of trees were available to Adam and Eve. All the beasts and animals had their straw to eat. There were no poisonous snakes. Satan can be blamed for making them poisonous.

There were 3) no weather problems and 4) no clothes to worry about. They didn't even know about sex. So, they didn't love each other because of *eros*. *Passion* and *eros* are not wrong, but when *no agàpè* exists (and only *eros*, passion or emotion exists), then you don't have much of a

chance for a good marriage. It is said that you must find someone who is compatible, but that is only *philia* and not *agàpè*.

## Agàpè Restored

All this is not good enough. Until *agàpè love* is restored, you cannot experience being *one flesh*. So, everything from *Genesis* concerning the reproduction of God can lead a person to *agàpè love*. *Agàpè love* is what this whole book is about. When you study *The Bible*, keep asking yourself what must be restored? It is *agàpè love*. The great love story is from a God who does things only for you because He loves you. It is a pleasure for Him to do so!

When you were young, you most likely played tennis, soccer, baseball or football. Maybe you went dancing and did all the fun things young people enjoy. One of the nicest things my wife and I like to do is watch our grandchildren have a good time. There are occasions when the family goes to the movie theater. My daughter wants to see one movie and my grandson wants to see a another movie. My granddaughter wants to see yet another picture. So who do you think goes with my 11-year-old granddaughter? It is such a pleasure to sit there and watch her laugh. It is the greatest fun I could possibly have.

## The Birdhouse

Once I bought our granddaughter a little birdhouse kit. She was told to assemble the birdhouse and then paint it. My granddaughter lives next door and my wife had bought a very small individual doll cake for her. She

asked Rachel, our granddaughter, to come over and pick it up. Our ulterior motive was to get a goodnight kiss, but Rachel was too busy building the birdhouse and painting it. We were so happy she was enthralled with the birdhouse, so we just went to bed. That is how God is. *There's nothing more delightful to God than seeing His children happy.* Everything was perfectly laid out in The Garden of Eden. They had *Eternal Life* from The Tree of Life. They had all the food they needed. No harm could come to them. They had perfect weather. There were no weeds or thorns in their garden. The Garden of Eden was Paradise. In Hebrew "*Eden*" means "*pleasantness.*" This was The Garden of The Land of Pleasantness. The whole land was delightful. *The garden was a Paradise on earth, but, then, it was lost to them.*

## Lost Eden

How did they lose it? God told them about *two trees* that were in The Garden. There had to be two trees or else Adam and Eve would not have had the free choice that God gave to them and now gives to you. The opportunity to have free choice was *the key.*

Genesis 3:1-11 <sup>1</sup>Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, Yea, has God said, you shall not eat of every tree of the garden? <sup>2</sup>And the woman said to the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup>But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, less you die. <sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not

surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. <sup>6</sup>And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons. <sup>8</sup>And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden. <sup>9</sup>And the LORD God called to Adam and said to him, Where are you? <sup>10</sup>And he said, I heard your voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. <sup>11</sup>And he said, Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat?

### A Running Commentary

Now consider all the text regarding the serpent up to the point where it is said, *“less you die.”* The Hebrew word for *“die”* means *“dying.”* It is an active verb. In other words, they would not drop dead immediately when they ate the fruit. This was what Satan was trying to convey. The real meaning pointed to the process of dying. *“<sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, you shall not surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.* [The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil had



good in it, but it also had evil]. *‘And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat.’*

Now concentrate upon the first thing they realized. It was that *the woman became a sex object*. They knew they were *naked*. *“<sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked [up to this time, sex was an extremely private personal thing between husband and wife] and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.”* They were so aware, *sexually*, at this point that reproduction became a matter of sex and not a matter of *agàpè love*. Rather, it was a matter of *eros love* or *passionate love*. In fact, there was so much passion that they were ashamed, *“<sup>8</sup>And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden.”*

God called out. Who called out? Was it really God? No, it was God's *angel/messenger*. It was *the angel* of The LORD speaking in God's place. *“<sup>10</sup>And he said, I heard your voice in the garden and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. [Notice that the first thing God said was] <sup>11</sup>Who told you that you were naked?”*

## Satan Introduced

The word “*Satan*” in the Hebrew is “*Hay-lale*” (Isaiah 14). “*Hay-lale*” means “*bolster*” and “*egotistically driven*.” Another root for “*Hay-lale*” is “*gives in marriage*.” So Satan

has his system of marriage. It was not based on *agàpè love* but sex. In *The Law of God* (Deuteronomy 24:1), you will find the word for “*married*” is “*baal*.” “*Baal*” is “*the god of fertility or sexuality*.” So Baal really is a lesser god of Satan who gives in marriage. Satan’s method of marriage is *purely sexual*. It is to produce more children whether legal or illegal. He wants many children because *the illegitimate children would not be able to inherit*. Do not forget, *inheritance* is one element in God’s *plan*. The children of the flesh, who came through Hagar, are greater in number than the children of *The Righteous* (Galatians 4). So Satan’s plan was to have more children by *the unrighteous individuals* who follow his system of marriage rather than God’s system of marriage for *the righteous*.

This is so important for you to study and fully understand. Hence, *the true way* of reproducing in His likeness under His system of marriage *was lost*.

Genesis 3:13-15 <sup>13</sup>And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat.  
<sup>14</sup>And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life:  
<sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed; it shall bruise your head and you shall bruise his heel.

God wanted to know what they had done. Paul explains that it was the woman who was deceived and not the man.

## Eve Was Deceived

Since *the woman* was deceived, she became *subject* to the *husband* who became her *master*. Because she was *the deceived one*, she now had to have someone rule over her as lord. Eve caused all the trouble that women have had since that time. “<sup>14</sup>*And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life.*”

The penalty for Satan is, “<sup>15</sup>*And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed.*” Remember that Eve and her descendants were going to be *the church*, eventually. Adam was to have been The Savior. But now, all children born through Eve would have Satan as their enemy. This is the woman's penalty, generation after generation. It continues with, “*it shall bruise your head.*” This is a prophecy of Christ when He will defeat Satan, “*and you shall bruise his heel.*” As each child is born, Satan will always be at their heels trying to deceive them and constantly lead them in a direction opposite from God's *way*. It does not stop until the seed (Christ) shall come.

## Coming Of The Seed

The story from this time on has to do with the coming of The Seed or *the prophecy* about Christ. This is why Christ had to become The Savior. Since it is through *inheritance*, it had to be a *pure seed* or a Godly seed. Note this vital difference. The Seed (Christ) had to come from a legal Godly marriage in order to *inherit* all things. It could not

come from Satan's seed or his type of marriage.

**John 8:19-20** <sup>19</sup>Then said they to him, Where is your Father? Jesus answered, You neither know me, nor my Father: if you had known me, you should have known my Father also. <sup>20</sup>These words spoke Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.

John introduced the account about The Sadducees and Pharisees accusing Christ of being a child of the devil. *“<sup>19</sup>Where is your Father? Jesus answered, You neither know me, nor my Father: if you had known me, you should have known my Father also. <sup>20</sup>These words spoke Jesus in the treasury, as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.”* This text tells you that The Pharisees and The Sadducees didn't know *the true God*. Look at their response to what Jesus said.

**John 8:33-34** <sup>33</sup>They answered him, We be Abraham's seed and were never in bondage to any man: how say you, You shall be made free? <sup>34</sup>Jesus answered them, Verily, verily I say to you, Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.

They alleged that they were pure, from *the righteous seed* and had a right to *the inheritance*. They declared that they were never in bondage.

## Satan's Children

Through Abraham, you are not a slave. But if you come through Satan's children, then you are in bondage and

you are a slave. Jesus explains the difference, “<sup>34</sup>*Whosoever commits sin is the servant of sin.*” If you are of *the pure seed*, then you will receive *the inheritance*.

John 8:44 You are of your father the devil and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar and the father of it.

What were those lusts? He had made Adam and Eve aware of sexuality and reproduction through sex in marriage but without being one flesh. Notice the claim that, “*He was a murderer [talking about Cain] from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him [he is the darkness]. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own; for he is a liar and the father of it.*”

Adam and Eve followed Satan (as *their father*) and his system of marriage. Always remember there are two types of marriage: 1) God's or 2) Satan's.

Genesis 3:16 To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.

God, through *an angel*, told the serpent that he was to be the enemy of Eve's children. The old serpent is going to be clipping at the heels of every single individual. “<sup>16</sup>*To the woman, he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception.*” Women have had labor pains ever since.

## Pain Of Childbirth

Childbirth should have been a pleasant, joyful experience right from the beginning. But rather, you find, “*in sorrow you shall bring forth children* [various levels of pain] *and your desire shall be to your husband.*”

*A woman from that time became property.* They were no longer one flesh. She literally became *the property of the man.* Throughout the ages, women have wondered why Solomon was allowed to have hundreds of wives, 700 concubines and still be God's selected king. It does not seem right. Well, Solomon didn't do anything wrong because he owned all those women. His (Solomon's) error was in honoring the pagan religions all his wives and concubines believed in. In essence, you could enter into a satanic system of marriage that was based on sexuality, power and possession. Until Christ paid the penalty, you were trapped by Satan's marriage. When Adam and Eve lost everything, they and their children had to wait approximately 4,000 years for Christ *to redeem them.* All the generations after them had to wait for Christ. So far you have covered 1) Creation, 2) Reproduction, 3) Inheritance and 4) Godly Marriage versus Satan's Marriage.

Matthew 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

## Restoration

The fifth element is *restoration* or restoring that which is lost. Christ's entire life, until He died, was about *restoration.* It is restoring that which was lost. Jesus specifically

explained why He had to come and what His purpose was. **“<sup>11</sup>For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost”** (Matthew 18:11). **The Son had to come to restore everything. How long would this take?**

**I John 3:8 He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.**

## **The Devil's System**

**This explains the length of time involved. There are two types of life. “<sup>8</sup>He that commits sin is of the devil.” This is following the devil's system which goes beyond marriage. This system goes beyond sin. He is trying to keep you from *any type of righteousness*. Whatever God had intended and created, Satan attempts to change (remove and deceive). Today, as far as marriage is concerned, many just *live together* instead of being legally married. Some have asked if they can live together so they can finish college or earn enough money before they get married. Fifty years ago, no one, except in Hollywood, would have asked that question. Almost everyone knew the answer would be “*No.*” In fact, it would have been unthinkable for them to ask such a question.**

**Marriage today no longer seems necessary. Satan saw that. Some parents who love their children don't seem to mind if they skip *the marriage part*. Perhaps they don't love their children *enough*. It is almost as if they want to get rid of the children they bore. In Satan's society, parents don't care about their children. Marriage is no**

longer necessary. Satan is trying to keep *society* from doing anything *the way God intended*. To understand God's principles, study the word "*adultery*" in Greek and you will discover it means "*fornication*." It is far better to marry than to sin and burn.

Genesis 4:6-7 <sup>6</sup>And the LORD said to Cain, Why are you wroth? and why is your countenance fallen? <sup>7</sup>If you do well, shall you not be accepted? and if you do not well, sin lies at the door. And to you shall be his desire and you shall rule over him.

## Cain and Abel

After Adam and Eve left The Garden of Eden because of sin, you find the story about Cain and Abel. Cain was a vegetable farmer while Abel was a shepherd. Abel offered a lamb for his sacrifice. Cain offered fruits and vegetables. Cain was upset because God (speaking through *the angel*) accepted Abel's offering over Cain's offering.

*The angel* of God gave important guidelines to Cain and Abel. "<sup>7</sup>*If you do well, shall you not be accepted? And if you do not well, sin lies at the door.*" Cain had to learn to master himself. He had to overcome jealousy and his carnal impulse. Because Cain could not control himself, he killed his brother. He had to leave and go to The Land of Nod.

## Land Of Nod

"*Nod*" in Hebrew means "*wandering*." Cain was left to wander around to try to find God but he never succeeded.



**During that period, most people lived for almost a thousand years (Methuselah lived to 969 years old). Before Cain left, God put a sign on him to protect him. This was because his other brothers and sisters (born to Adam and Eve) would want to kill Cain for having killed Abel. During the thousand years, Cain's line started to grow with more wives and children. Lamech had two wives, Adah and Zillah. Lamech sinned a great deal more than Cain. Lamech said if Cain was forgiven seven times, he should be forgiven seventy times seven (Genesis 4:24). Why did God put that mark on Cain and his lineage? It was because they were murderers and very violent. Now fast-forward about 1,500 years to the time just before the flood in Genesis 6. Did you ever wonder why God allowed man to live nearly 1,000 years of age?**

**II Peter 3:5-9 <sup>5</sup>For this they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: <sup>6</sup>Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished: <sup>7</sup>But the heavens and the earth, which are now, by the same word are kept in store, reserved to fire against the day of judgment and perdition of ungodly men. <sup>8</sup>But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day. <sup>9</sup>The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance.**

**The major gift God gave to Adam and Eve was *free choice*. Peter said there would be scoffers in the last days. <sup>5</sup>*For***

*this [speaking of the time of the flood] they willingly are ignorant of, that by the word of God the heavens were of old, and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: 'Whereby the world that then was, being overflowed with water, perished.'*

## Judgment By Fire

You now have judgment by both water and fire. Why did God give a thousand years for this process? It is because He is, *"Not willing that any should perish but that all should come to repentance."* Through the line of Kings, God *allowed the people to live a thousand years with free choice* to decide what they thought was *right or wrong*. What did they choose?

Genesis 6:5 And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.

Every thought in their mind was to perpetrate evil continually. The world was racked with violence. So, from The Garden of Eden, Satan's *way* of marriage was chosen over God's way of marriage. Mankind made the wrong choice.

## Noah And The Flood

Cain's *seed* followed Satan's *way*. Over 1,500 years, how many *righteous seeds* were found? Only one and that was Noah. Noah's father, Lamech, lived 777 years. Seven is the number of perfection. His son, Noah, was the only righteous one. He was perfect.

The word “*perfect*” does not mean that Noah never sinned. He drank too much but still Noah was *blameless*. Christ explains, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). The word “*perfect*” means “*blameless*” but not without sin. Every human being, from the time of Adam and Eve, has sinned and comes short of The Glory of God. The only way to be *perfect* and *blameless* is to make *the right choice to faithfully follow the will of God to perfection*.

If Adam and Eve would have said “*No*” to Satan, then things would have been so different. They should have looked only to The Tree of Life. Instead, mankind started off with murderers, Cain and his children. Then the world ended up with only one perfect man, Noah. At that juncture, God flooded the world (II Peter 3). He had given *each person almost one thousand years* to live and to make *the right choice*. Their behavior never changed even though they suffered and had many sorrows. It somehow never made any difference to them.

So God destroyed them all – except Noah, his wife and his children. Mankind wouldn't follow God even though they lived up to a thousand years and saw all the sorrows of the world. They had many opportunities to realize that sin brought only sorrow. So, God decided to reduce man's life span to 120 years. By the time of David, God reduced man's lifespan to 70 years. It may have been a favor to reduce the life span. Job said that the day of his death was better than the day of his birth. He knew what he was talking about. Out of His *mercy*, God said that He gave a thousand years, then 120 years and later only 70 years, for mankind to *learn* of good and evil. Still, those pre-

flood people did not choose the right way to live. They never made the right choice.

## Repentance Required

Instead of following Satan, God wants you to repent and change your life. When God completed the physical universe, He saw it was all *good*. Adam and Eve could have saved mankind much heartache! They could have reproduced themselves in God's *likeness* and *character* (agàpè). From the time of the flood to the time of restoration, *The Bible* is about how Christ came to *save* that which was *lost* (Matthew 18). It is as simple as that. *The pure seed* would not exist until Abraham came along. He was perfect in all his ways (based upon *inheritance*).

## Righteous Abraham

In the time of restoration, Abraham was the first one who was willing to obey God. More and more, you can see how God duplicates Himself. In theology, it is called *the duality of The Bible*. Abraham had the same choice that was given to Adam and Eve. But, Abraham was not required to keep *The Law of Moses*. More people in theology write articles to prove *The Ten Commandments* were *in force* before the time of Moses. This is not true! Sin was always commonplace, but humans were not guilty until God gave His Law (Romans 4:15).

*The Law* wasn't added until four hundred and thirty years after Abraham (Galatians 3:17). There was no law during the time of Abraham. It was added 430 years later! He chose to follow God's *will*. He wanted to do *good* and

not sin. Abraham kept *The Commandments, Statutes and Judgments in his heart*. He was accounted *righteous* because of *his faith*. Besides, he was willing to sacrifice his own son to show *his willing heart*.

Then *the angel* came to Abraham and said, “*For now I know that you fear God, seeing you have not withheld your son, your only son from me*” (Genesis 22:12). Getting to the point, in order for Noah and Abraham to reach the extreme limit of knowing God, they would have to bring themselves to complete *repentance*. However, you can't repent on your own. A person only has free choice. Your choice is to decide to follow The Will of God or *the will of Satan*. When you decide to do everything your way, then you are following Satan's way.

## Sacrifice Of Isaac

When Abraham was willing to offer Isaac, God knew Abraham would do what God wanted. It was counted to Abraham as *righteousness*. This is the whole story from *The Book of Genesis to The Book of Revelation*. The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil were offered to Adam and Eve as well as to Abraham. Abraham was told, “*Know of a surety that your seed shall be a stranger in a land that is not theirs and shall serve them; and they shall afflict them four hundred years.*” (Genesis 15:13). After those 430 years, Moses was a Prophet, like Christ, who would lead them.

John 5:39 Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me.

Jesus said to “<sup>39</sup>*Search the scriptures.*” Only *The Old Testament Scriptures* were available at that time since *The New Testament* wasn't written yet. *The New Testament* is *The Son* speaking to mankind. *The Old Testament* is *The Word* speaking to you. The pure seed came from Eve through Noah and Abraham (Genesis 3:15). Abraham made that choice. Therefore, he was *righteous* and *The Covenant of Promise* was given to him as *an inheritance* through his *seed*, Christ. Christ gives *the promises in The Scriptures* as they testify of Him.

John 5:45-46 <sup>45</sup>Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust. <sup>46</sup>For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.

*The Law of Moses* was *The Old Covenant*. Those who trusted in *The Old Covenant* said to Christ, “*We are the seed of Abraham.*” Christ said to forget whose seed you came from because *the Scriptures* testify of “*Me.*” You trusted Moses and now he is the one who is going to accuse you. The whole purpose of *The Law of Moses* was to give the same choice that Adam and Eve had been given. “<sup>46</sup>*For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.*”

## An Expression Of Christ

*The Law* is an expression of Christ, but it was, also, *a bondage of works with a curse*. Some Christians believe that being under *The Law* also means being “*under a penalty.*” Not one *Scripture* tells you that *The Law* is *a penalty*. The penalty is to be under the curse. That is the penalty.

Paul said, “*For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse*” (Galatians 3:10). *The works* are under the curse. Being under *The Law* means you accepted His *administration* as a *schoolmaster* to lead you to *Eternal Life*. Christ said *The Law* doesn't give you *Eternal Life*, but it leads you to Christ. Later, in *Galatians*, you see it was *added* because of *sin*, until The Seed should come (Christ). It was a Law for the people who needed it because they were unrepentant.

I Timothy 1:6-9 <sup>6</sup>From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling; <sup>7</sup>Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. <sup>8</sup>But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; <sup>9</sup>Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers.

These people are arguing about which day is The Pass-over and when is the time of Pentecost. Many today are still arguing about it! “<sup>8</sup>*But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully.*” This is *the intended purpose* God had. Why did God add *The Law*? It was because of transgression.

## Law Created For Whom?

How is *The Law* used lawfully? “<sup>9</sup>*Knowing this, that the law is not made for [whom?] a righteous man.*” Noah and Abraham were *righteous*, so *The Law* didn't apply to them. But, to whom was *The Law* given? It was “*for the law-*

*less and disobedient.” The Law was made for “the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers.”*

Do you want to be under *The Law*? If you are striving to be like Christ, the answer is “no.” When Abraham was given The Abrahamic Promise of Christ, it was through him that all nations would be blessed. It was required to go through The Seed of Abraham and The Law of Inheritance. One of the greatest key elements of God is *inheritance*. Abraham transferred *the inheritance* to Isaac since Isaac allowed himself to be sacrificed, just like Christ.

### Eliezer's Mission

Read the account of Isaac's marriage in Genesis 24. Eliezer, the servant, is sent by the father who says he didn't want Isaac to take a wife from the seed of the nations of that region; instead, he was to take a wife from his own family (his *inheritance*). Eliezer goes on his mission and the first thing he asks God is how will he know the identity of the right woman. He is told, “*The woman who comes to this well and gives you the water.*” And along came Rebekah. She gave him the water. He thanked God. They went to the first-born, Laban, who assumed the role of his father who had died. Laban had the authority to permit Eliezer to take his sister, Rebekah, to be the bride of Isaac. But he asked Rebekah, “*Are you willing to go?*”

So, this was not a forced marriage, although he could have told her to go and she would have been required to because they were under Satan's system of marriage. She was *a possession*. She was to be sold and her husband



would become her master. Instead, Rebekah said she would go. They never saw each other and yet she went to marry Isaac. This became the type of marriage that God set forth to restore. Study John 2 through John 4. The first miracle Christ performed was at the marriage of Cana (John 2). It was *before* His time to perform miracles and He asked His mother, “*4Woman, what have I to do with you? Mine hour is not yet come. 5His mother said to the servants, Whatsoever he says to you, do it.*”

### Miracle At Cana

So the governor of the feast brought the firkins which were large water jars for purification. They were to purify people for the marriage and Christ said, “*Fill the waterpots with water.*” And the water turned into wine. It was the very best wine, there was enough for everyone and there was plenty left over.

Who is God saving? He is saving everyone. When asked who He was, Jesus replied, “*A friend of The Bridegroom*” (John 3). After this, Jesus Christ went to Samaria. He said, “*It must be that I go to Samaria*” (which was a Gentile land). He went to the Samaritan woman and asked for a drink of water as Eliezer had done. Christ asked, “*Where is your husband?*” She answered, “*I have no husband.*” She was right. She had five husbands. Christ was forgiving her.

Then Christ says, “*Look, I can give you water and you can have everlasting life.*” This ties in the marriage of Isaac (Genesis 24). Christ had to go to Samaria (Gentiles) since His own people rejected Him because of *The Law*. From

the time of Moses to when God dealt with Israel, He made *A Marriage Contract* (Hosea 2). That contract was signed by blood, but why? Without blood, there is no remission of sins. Moses said, “*See, I have set before you this day life and good and death and evil*” (Deuteronomy 30:15). Adam and Eve had the same choice as The Children of Israel, to choose *life* or *death*. The Israelites, Adam and Eve, all, had a choice of choosing blessings or cursings (life or death). The people had the same choice.

### The Samaritan Woman

Christ was telling the woman from Samaria that the day is coming when she will no longer worship The Father in Jerusalem or in Samaria. She will worship The Father in *Spirit*. There will be A New Marriage Covenant which is A New Marriage Agreement. He said that The Father seeks those who will worship Him in *Spirit* and *Truth* and not in *The Works of The Law*. Now, do you understand the real story of the Samaritan woman? Israel (The Jews) did not repent and, instead, rejected Christ. Go all the way from Moses through *The Books of Samuel, Kings and Chronicles*. There you will find they kept rejecting Him until they were taken into captivity. Do you see how the story flows?

Matthew 18:11 For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost.

Jesus picked a nation to be *a witness* for the world. God chose Israel because they came through *the inheritance* (pure seed) and were to be His Witness, The Bride and The Church. When they rejected Christ, He told them they

would be last (originally they were to be first) in *the kingdom*. So, Christ went to The Samaritans (The Gentiles).

Christ was coming to *restore that which was lost*, “<sup>11</sup>*For the Son of man [Christ] is come to save that which was lost.*” This covers almost 4,000 years. Now it has been almost 2,000 years since Christ gave His *life* for you.

Colossians 1:27 To whom God would make known what is the riches of the glory of this mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the hope of glory.

## Passover Symbols

The Passover symbols were changed from *the lamb* to *the bread and wine*. The *wine* symbolized His *blood*. This *New Covenant* changed *The Law* from The Letter (*works*) to *the Spirit*. The *bread* symbolized His *body*. Now when you are “*In Christ*” (the mystery of God), Christ is “*In You*” and He is your *Husband* (Colossians 1:27). This is *The New Covenant*. It is a contract, which is a *spiritual agreement*.

Hebrews 7:14 For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Judah; of which tribe Moses spoke nothing concerning priesthood.

There was a change in The Priesthood from Levi to Melchizedek. There was a change of *The Law*. That Law was changed from The Letter of *The Law* to God writing His Law *in your heart*. It is The Royal Law. He writes *The Law* in your heart through His Bride (Church) being married to The Groom (Christ).

You are “*One*” with Christ. The Bride will have Christ’s character and True Marriage will finally be restored. Agàpè (God’s love) is the fulfillment (completion) of *The Law* (Romans 13:10). All this brings you back to the 6<sup>th</sup> element – *redemption* and *release*. As a reminder, the elements are: 1) Creation, 2) Godly Reproduction, 3) Inheritance, 4) Godly Marriage and 5) Restoration. Christ was *The Seed* to bring *that restoration*.

Christ had to give His life to restore the marriage. The spilling of blood brought *the forgiveness of sin*. The 6<sup>th</sup> element is *Salvation* (given in two parts).

### Salvation – Redemption And Release

One part of *Salvation* (the 6<sup>th</sup> element) is *Redemption* and the other is *Release*. You are *saved* through one of two ways. You are *saved* by Christ *redeeming* you through the proper marriage to become *one* with Him. The second option is for you to be *released* from those sins. Once *redemption* is fulfilled and once *release* is given, then *The Kingdom of God* (the 7<sup>th</sup> element) will come.

Job 19:25-26 <sup>25</sup>For I know that my redeemer lives and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth:  
<sup>26</sup>And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God.

Job knew this story over 3,500 years ago. After all his troubles, Job was being “picked on” by his friends. Job said, “<sup>25</sup>*For I know that my redeemer lives and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth* [talking about Christ]:  
<sup>26</sup>*And though after my skin worms destroy this body* [this

tabernacle], *yet in my flesh* [at the resurrection] *shall I see God.*” Job knew he was going to be *redeemed*. Why must Job be redeemed? It is because *Job was sold to Satan, so Christ had to redeem him.*

I John 3:8 He that commits sin is of the devil; for the devil sins from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil.

The reason for The Son of God is, “*that he might destroy the works of the devil.*” What did the devil do? He brought envy, lust, murder, sorrow and death to the world. He destroyed marriage. He kept you from being *One with God*. Christ came to destroy Satan’s works and bring *restoration*. Christ will *save you at Passover* when you take *the wine* (His blood) and *the bread* (His body). The blood is necessary because *life is in the blood*. Christ had to shed His blood. He had to sacrifice His *body* so each of you can become “*One Body*” *with Him* to restore that *original agapè marriage*.

By repenting, you are saying, “*God, I want your will, not mine.*” Christ is your Husband by contract (Ephesians 5)! Christ’s responsibility is to make you Holy, without spot or wrinkle and completely unblemished. That is Christ’s job. So when you drink the wine and eat the bread at The Passover, you are signing The Marriage Agreement. Christ’s *promise* to you is that He will put “*God – In You.*” For you to become *One with God*, His Law must be in your heart and mind.

He must redeem you which is symbolized by *The Jubilee*

**Year, which is *the restoration* of The Sabbath (Leviticus 25). *The Jubilee Year is The Marriage Feast entering into God's rest. The Book of The Life of The Lamb is the story of The Marriage of The Lamb to His wife (the church). Christ first became agàpè as The Word and now you, too, can become agàpè as The Word. You become One with God and God will have reproduced Himself. During The Millennium, at the time of The Feast of Tabernacles, all Israel will be saved (Ezekiel 37).***

## **Everyone Resurrected**

**Everyone who ever lived will be resurrected to their human age and live another 100 years (Isaiah 65:20). Whether an old man or a young child, everyone will live out the 100 years. However, they won't have 1,000 years to live. They have to keep *The Law* because they were sinners and never *repented*. As they *repent*, they become Sons of God. Israel was supposed to be *the first among nations*, but they became last. When The Bride was called, they were called from all nations – not just from one nation. Who is The Bride? The Church is The Bride. They were not circumcised according to promises made to Abraham but were *circumcised in their heart* (Romans 2). That is God's Law written in your heart.**

**So, unless Israel and The Gentiles have circumcision of the heart, they cannot be The Bride. You can only be The Bride (through the time of Pentecost) when God's *Spirit* is given. All who are resurrected in The First Resurrection become The Bride of Christ. However, Israel will not be resurrected at that time. Notice, there were 144,000 who came out of The Tribulation. Each of the pearly gates in**

New Jerusalem represents one of The Tribes of Israel. So all The Prophets, Abraham, Isaac, Moses and those who were willing to follow God will be in *that First Resurrection*. In the story about Lazarus and the rich man, the rich man did not qualify for The First Resurrection. The rich man looked up and saw Abraham, Isaac, Jacob and Lazarus in The First Resurrection. Only *The Bride* is in The First Resurrection. When Israel is *saved* entirely as a nation, they are The Guests at Christ's Wedding to The Church (His Bride). This includes other nations who are *saved*. All of them are *redeemed* until The Marriage Feast.

## Marriage Feast

At The Marriage Feast, *redemption is no longer an issue*. After that, Christ will *redeem no one*. "To *redeem*" is to "buy back ahead of time." This compares with *The Book of Ruth* and the story of Naomi, who owned the parcel of land (with Boaz who was of *the inheritance* through The Seed). Boaz bought the land and, with it, he bought Ruth, who was a Gentile (like the woman from Samaria).

Once The Marriage Feast is over, it is over. Redemption is over at The Time of The Jubilee. Then, you can only be *released*. *Redemption is buying you back because of false marriage*. It is for The Wedding Feast (The Groom and The Bride). When you come to The Wedding Feast, if you don't have on the right clothes, you cannot enter. But once that Marriage Feast is completed, *the release* comes (all debts are forgiven). You are either dressed in your human flesh or as a spirit like God (a rainbow). How are they forgiven? They are forgiven the minute they repent or confess that

**Jesus is Lord (Romans 10). The ones dressed in human flesh are thrown into The Lake of Fire and it is there they readily repent. There is no more debt.**

## **The Kingdom Of God**

**And so the whole story of *The Bible* ends, “Oh death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?” (I Corinthians 15:55). The works of Satan are over and done with. The 7<sup>th</sup> element is *The Kingdom of God*. You now have *the 7 elements* explained. Now you know the whole story of *The Bible*. When you read it, you must understand every major part. When you read the genealogy (which can be so tiring), it will have a greater meaning. It explains everything you need to know about *the inheritance* (The Pure Seed).**

**The 7 elements in God's mind draws a map for you to follow in *The Bible*.**

- 1) Creation**
- 2) Godly Reproduction**
- 3) Inheritance**
- 4) Godly Marriage**
- 5) Restoration**
- 6) Salvation**
  - a) Redemption**



**b) Release**

**7) Kingdom of God**

*Use these 7 elements of God's mind when studying The Word of God. Your understanding of God's riches will spur you on to great spiritual growth!*

## Chapter 7

### THE TRUE GOSPEL

Most *Bibles* have the words *The Holy Bible* printed on the cover. Now picture your *Bible* as a Puzzle Box. Inside the box are thousands and thousands of pieces that must be properly assembled. Most puzzle boxes have a picture of the puzzle on it, in order to give you an idea of exactly how to put the puzzle together. But your *Bible* has no picture to guide you.

Within *The Bible*, there are little bits and pieces of truth – a little here and a little there. These are pieces which can help you put the picture together and reveal *the plan* that God has in store for you. If you put most of *the major pieces together*, you will be able to understand God's *purpose* for His *creation*. God calls these puzzle pieces, "*The mysteries of The Kingdom of Heaven*" (Matthew 13:11). The word "*Holy*" means "*clean*" or "*unblemished*" and the word "*Bible*" is from the word "*biblos*" in Greek meaning "*book.*" *The Holy Bible* contains "*truthful books.*" When you look at the complete picture of The Plan of God, you would start with Adam and Eve, then proceed through *The Old Testament* and then come to *The New Testament*. The last pieces would involve Jesus Christ and Jerusalem followed by The Apostles and *Revelation*.

#### Thousands Of Puzzle Pieces

So, *The Bible* holds thousands of different pieces, wait-

ing for you to place them (as God directs) *into perfect order*. First, you attempt to put the large pieces together. Once the major pieces are properly anchored, then you will be able to assemble the smaller pieces on your own. As you continue to study your *Bible* and through prayer, God will reveal more and more to you. As with every puzzle, you must have a starting point. What is *The True Gospel*? In the yellow pages, you can look up churches and you will find a multitude of different names, including Four Square Gospel or Full Gospel. Now, you will begin to learn *the true meaning* of the word “*Gospel*.” Paul’s *Epistle to The Galatians* is all about *The Gospel*. In most cases, scribes wrote Paul’s *Epistles* as he dictated what they should write. In this particular case, Paul was so upset that he wrote *The Letter to The Galatians* in his very own handwriting.

Galatians 6:11 You see how large a letter I have written to you with mine own hand.

Paul wanted them to know the extent of the conflict he was having. He was visibly upset about the subject he was covering. Galatia is the southern part of what is today called Turkey. At one time it was called Asia Minor. Basically, it was the location for Paul’s first evangelistic journey (as he traveled to establish churches).

## Preaching The Gospel

Over the years, as Paul continued preaching *The Gospel*, he started to hear that the people in Galatia (southern Turkey or Asia Minor) were beginning to follow something different from what he had *originally taught them*. This

upset him greatly. Another name for *The Letter to The Galatians* could be called *The True Gospel*. *The Book of Galatians* tells you where to look when searching for *The True Gospel*.

Galatians 1:1-12 <sup>1</sup>Paul, an Apostle, (not of men, neither by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead;) <sup>2</sup>And all the brethren which are with me, to the churches of Galatia: <sup>3</sup>Grace be to you and peace from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>4</sup>Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God and our Father: <sup>5</sup>To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. <sup>6</sup>I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ to another gospel: <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the gospel of Christ. <sup>8</sup>But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than that which we have preached to you, let him be accursed. <sup>9</sup>As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel to you than that you have received, let him be accursed. <sup>10</sup>For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ. <sup>11</sup>But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. <sup>12</sup>For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the revelation of Jesus Christ.

Paul was irate, angry and highly affected when he wrote this letter. Paul starts by telling The Galatians that he is an Apostle – but not an Apostle made by men. Paul did

not receive *The True Gospel* from any man or from any of The Apostles. It came directly by *revelation*.

## The First Lesson

This is the first lesson that Paul tried to get across to them. He explains how the words he preached were not given to him by a human being or from a human conference, “*Neither by man, but by Jesus Christ and God the Father, who raised him from the dead.*” Through this letter, Paul is telling you to whom he is writing. He says, “<sup>2</sup>*And all the brethren which are with me.*” There were those who were *not* with him, so he was writing, only, to those who were still following what he taught.

Notice that he said, “<sup>2</sup>*To the churches of Galatia: <sup>3</sup>Grace be to you and peace from God the Father and from our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>4</sup>Who gave himself for our sins that he might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the will of God [it is God's will to save the world] and our Father: <sup>5</sup>To whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen. <sup>6</sup>I marvel that you are so soon removed from him that called you into the grace of Christ to another gospel: [Now the critical key is that they had received a gift, and yet, they turned to another Gospel] <sup>7</sup>Which is not another; [This is because it is not even considered to be a gospel – in that sense of the word] but there be some that trouble you and would pervert the gospel of Christ.*”

The word “*pervert*” is a good English translation, but it does not tell the full story. The Greek root for the word “*pervert*” is “*to turn*” or “*to reverse.*” *This different gospel* was affecting The Galatians to the point that they were

going *backwards*, instead of *growing spiritually*. Paul was so concerned that he called for a curse to be placed on those teachers as well as on any Christians if they followed *another gospel*.

### Another Gospel?

Many of The Christians were following *another gospel*. Paul felt it was unthinkable for them to follow *another gospel* so soon after he had explained *The True Gospel* to them. Perhaps after 2,000 years, you can understand why there are thousands of variations of *The Gospel*. This phenomenon was amazing, because it was so soon after Paul had been there, in person, to speak to The Galatians. He said, “<sup>10</sup>*For do I now persuade men, or God? Or do I seek to please men? For if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.*” Paul’s *purpose* was not to please men. He said, “<sup>11</sup>*But I certify you, brethren, that the gospel which was preached of me is not after man. For I neither received it of man, neither was I taught it, but by the Revelation of Jesus Christ.*” *The True Gospel* came straight from Jesus Christ. Then Paul explains the history of how he received *The True Gospel* directly from Christ.

Galatians 1:18-19 <sup>18</sup>Then after three years I went up to Jerusalem to see Peter and abode with him fifteen days. <sup>19</sup>But other of the Apostles saw I none, save James the Lord’s brother.

Paul was converted on the road to Damascus. He was blinded at this time but his eyesight was later restored. Jesus Christ personally taught Paul *The True Gospel*. When Paul returned to the region of Syria and Cilicia, the people

learned that he had been converted to Christianity.

**Galatians 2:1-4** <sup>1</sup>Then fourteen years after I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus with me also. <sup>2</sup>And I went up by revelation and communicated to them that gospel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, less by any means I should run or had run, in vain. <sup>3</sup>But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised: <sup>4</sup>And that because of false brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us into bondage:

## 17 Years

Paul preached *this Gospel* for seventeen years. This was three years after his conversion. He spent two weeks with Peter and then preached for fourteen more years, for a total of about seventeen years. “<sup>1</sup>*After I went up again to Jerusalem with Barnabas and took Titus with me also.* <sup>2</sup>*And I went up by revelation.* [Christ wanted him to go. Paul didn't want The Apostles or teachers to get into each other's way or to cause dissension among themselves]. <sup>3</sup>*But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcised.*” Barnabas was a Jew and Titus was a Greek. The problem was circumcision, although this historical rite was just the beginning of the problem.

*The Law* was, also, a part of the controversy. Eventually, you will find that there are *two types of gospels*. This is based on, “<sup>4</sup>*And that because of false brethren unawares*

*brought in.*” False teachers (or brethren) were preaching another *gospel*. These people “*came in privily to spy out our liberty which we have in Christ Jesus, that they might bring us to bondage.*” The false brethren preached that these believers must be *circumcised*. But circumcision produced only slavery instead of liberty. With circumcision, The Jews wanted The Gentile Christians to keep *The Whole Law of Moses* (Acts 15:5).

Acts 15:5 But there rose up certain of the sect of the Pharisees which believed, saying, That it was needful to circumcise them and to command them to keep the law of Moses.

## True Freedom

As God reveals His *plan* for Christians, you learn so much more about *true freedom*. In The United States, Americans talk about living in a free society. However, no one knows the true meaning of freedom until they have received true Christianity. God’s way is total liberty and complete freedom. God does not impose *works* that take away your freedom. You will come to see *The True Gospel* is not a religion or any religious ceremony, but a way of living your Christian life.

Galatians 2:5-10 <sup>5</sup>To whom we gave place by subjection, no, not for an hour; that the truth of the gospel might continue with you. <sup>6</sup>But of these who seemed to be somewhat, (whatsoever they were, it makes no matter to me: God accepts no man’s person) for they who seemed to be somewhat in conference added nothing to me: <sup>7</sup>But contrariwise, when they saw that the



gospel of the uncircumcision was committed to me, as the gospel of the circumcision was to Peter; <sup>8</sup>(For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision, the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles). <sup>9</sup>And when James, Cephas and John, who seemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given to me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go to the heathen and they to the circumcision. <sup>10</sup>Only they would that we should remember the poor; the same which I also was forward to do.

Paul said that he had not given place by subjection to these teachers at all. What he spoke was *the truth*. It was *The True Gospel* and he desired “*the gospel might continue with you* [he was mostly concerned about the teachers] “*who seemed to be somewhat* [the teachers may have acted like the leaders of these people but they were not] *whatsoever they were, it makes no matter to me* [Paul didn't care if it was Peter, John or James], *God accepts no man's person* [Paul stated that he did not preach what any man told him; but rather he preached what Christ told him to preach].” But “*in conference*” these teachers were discussing the pros of Circumcision and *The Law*. Paul said these men “*added nothing to me.*”

## Two Gospels

Here are the two gospels, “<sup>7</sup>*when they saw that the gospel of the uncircumcision was committed to me, as the gospel of the circumcision was to Peter.*” Notice, that both are the same gospel, but one gospel makes you *go backward*, while *the other gospel* will help you *grow spiritually*. Isn't this

ironic? Peter was given the responsibility of The Gospel of The Circumcision (The Jews) but Paul was given The Gospel of The Uncircumcision (The Gentiles).

When these pieces of the puzzle are put together, the result becomes very plain. Paul said, “*<sup>8</sup>For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the Apostleship of the circumcision.*” So, Paul is stating that even though Peter was the first, Peter could never have been The Pope of Rome because Peter is The Apostle to The Circumcision (The Israelites). Peter was given the job of *converting The Tribes of Israel*.

Only Paul could have been The Pope of Rome, since only he was given the job of *converting The Gentiles*. Notice: “*<sup>8</sup>the same was mighty in me toward the Gentiles.*” This shows that Peter was teaching The Gospel of The Circumcision, which was effective in converting Israelites to Christ. Paul was effective when he was sent to *the uncircumcised*. “*<sup>9</sup>And when James, Cephas [Peter] and John, who seemed to be pillars [leaders] perceived the grace that was given to me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowship; that we should go to the heathen.*”

The “*heathen*” are *The Gentiles* or “*the remainder of the people in the world.*” There are only two groups of people. You are either an Israelite (12 Tribes of Israel – the circumcised) to whom *the promise* was made, or else, you are one of the rest of the world (the uncircumcised – The Gentiles). So Paul’s Apostleship was *to all the others of the world*. “*We should go to the heathen [uncircumcised] and they to the circumcision [The 12 Tribes].*” Peter specifically had to remain as The Apostle to The Circumcision for a very good reason.

Acts 15:24-25 <sup>24</sup>Forasmuch as we have heard, that certain which went out from us have troubled you with words, subverting your souls, saying, You must be circumcised and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment: <sup>25</sup>It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men to you with our beloved Barnabas and Paul.

The Apostles wrote a letter to The Gentile Christians stating their unanimous agreement of what Gentile Christians were obligated to do as *believers*. They said, “<sup>25</sup>*It seemed good to us, being assembled with one accord, to send chosen men to you.* [This was done with this letter that explained how some went out from us and said] <sup>24</sup>*you must be circumcised and keep the law: to whom we gave no such commandment*” (Acts 15:24-25).

Matthew 16:15-19 <sup>15</sup>He said to them, But whom say you that I am? <sup>16</sup>And Simon Peter answered and said, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. <sup>17</sup>And Jesus answered and said to him, Blessed are you, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it to you, but my Father which is in heaven. <sup>18</sup>And I say also to you, That you are Peter and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. <sup>19</sup>And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

Why were these two Apostles given *two different gospels* (to Israel and to The Gentiles) with which to work with and teach? The answer begins with, “<sup>15</sup>*He [Jesus] said to them,*

*But whom say you that I am? [And Peter said] <sup>16</sup>You are the Christ, the Son of the living God. [Then, Christ said to him] <sup>17</sup>Blessed are you, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood has not revealed it to you, but my Father which is in heaven. <sup>18</sup>And I say also to you, that you are Peter.”* Repetition is vital.

## The Little Stone

Peter was a little pebble, stone or “*petros.*” But “*upon this rock [boulder – Christ] I will build my church; and the gates of hell [the grave] shall not prevail against it.*” This is a very significant statement. Why did Jesus say death would not prevail? What did Christ say to Peter? “<sup>19</sup>*And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven.*” Peter received a special commission which the other Apostles did not receive. It was because he recognized that Christ was The Son of God.

Christ told him, “<sup>19</sup>*I will give you the keys to the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.*” What does that mean? It means that God commissioned Peter *to open the way into His kingdom for The Gentiles.* He had the keys. *Peter converted the first Gentile.* Christ had Peter (not Paul) convert the first Gentile. Peter obtained the key to unlock the door to The Kingdom of God for The Gentiles. Peter, The Apostle whom God used in Acts 10, remembered the vision of all the unclean animals which came to him three different times.

God repeatedly told Peter to eat by saying, “*Don’t take*

*what God has cleansed and call it unclean.”* God was dealing directly with The Apostle Peter who obtained *the key to the kingdom* for The Gentiles! Hence, The Gentiles were no longer regarded as common, unclean or unworthy to know God's *plan*. Now, Gentiles could, also, be converted. So, God chose Peter as The Apostle to open *the way to God's kingdom*.

Acts 10:28 And he said to them, You know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company or come to one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.

### The Significance Of Cornelius

Peter was told who the first Gentile convert would be. God not only picked a Gentile, but in fact, He picked a Roman. Furthermore, He selected a military man, as the first Gentile to be converted. The text says, “<sup>28</sup>*And he [Peter] said to them, You know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company or come to one of another nation; but God has showed me that I should not call any man common or unclean.*”

Peter was the only Apostle who could open the door for The Gentiles. Only Peter was given that key. So, The Apostle Peter did, indeed, open the door for the rest of the world of Gentiles to inherit The Kingdom of God. Christ told Peter that he would receive the keys to unlock the way into The Kingdom of God (Matthew 16). Christ would bind it in heaven and on earth – after Peter accepted Cornelius.

**Peter was used to convert Cornelius, the first Gentile. He was The Apostle responsible for unlocking the door so Gentiles could come to The Kingdom of God. On the other hand, Paul was called *out of season* and was The Apostle to The Uncircumcised. (Peter only had the key to open the door to The Uncircumcised).**

**Those who were under The Apostle Paul were under The Gospel of Grace. Peter was working with people who were under *The Gospel of Circumcision* (Israelites) which *reversed* the process of The Spiritual Gospel of The Kingdom.**

### **How Was The Gospel Reversed?**

**Galatians 2:11-15 <sup>11</sup>But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withstood him to the face, because he was to be blamed. <sup>12</sup>For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and separated himself, fearing them which were of the circumcision. <sup>13</sup>And the other Jews dissembled likewise with him; insomuch that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation. <sup>14</sup>But when I saw that they walked not uprightly according to the truth of the gospel, I said to Peter before them all, If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of Gentiles and not as do the Jews, why compel you the Gentiles to live as do the Jews? <sup>15</sup>We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles**

**Still, Peter was afraid of The Circumcision Christians. Most Christians, at that time, were Jews. In Antioch, they came together in a gathering where The Circumcised Jews**

(A Tribe of Israel) and Gentiles (the rest of the world, The Uncircumcised) were both in attendance.

Peter would not have anything to do with The Gentiles, so Paul stood up and told him off by saying, “<sup>14</sup>*If you, being a Jew, live after the manner of Gentiles.*” So, Peter, himself, was not following The Gospel of The Circumcision. He was following The Gospel of The Uncircumcised in his Christian life. In essence, Paul asked, “*How can you, Peter, be like that?*” Peter was afraid to talk to The Gentiles when The Circumcised Jews were around – but, in *private*, he would live just like *The Gospel of The Uncircumcised* (to The Gentiles). Peter was humbled by the incident and accepted Paul’s admonition. Now, understand this piece of the puzzle. Essentially, Paul was saying, “*Look, there are two gospels.*” There is The Gospel of Circumcision (to Israel) and there is The Gospel of The Uncircumcised (to The Gentiles). One requires you to be circumcised because it has *great meaning* for Israel. But, in 70 A.D., *the temple* was destroyed by Titus, Emperor of Rome, which ended The Gospel of Circumcision or *The Old Covenant* (Hebrews 8:13).

## Decision From Jerusalem

After the matter was discussed, The Apostles got together and concluded, “*Paul, they don’t have to be circumcised; you are doing the right thing. Only remember the poor.*”

James 1:26-27 <sup>26</sup>If any man among you seem to be religious and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man’s religion is vain. <sup>27</sup>Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To

visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

During the 15 days, Paul spoke not only to Peter but to James also. You will find what true Christian religion really is (James 1:26). The Jewish religion is The Gospel of The Circumcision (Works of *The Law*). However, Christianity, The Gospel of The Uncircumcised, is *not* a religion (Colossians 1:27 and Colossians 2:3,8). The Gospel of The Circumcision is a Jewish religion based on *works*. The Apostle James tells you about the only types of works that Christians should perform. Any other works carry a *curse* because they are man-made religions. If your religion is based on works, then you *must* keep every bit of *The Law* so as not to be under the curse (James 2:10). “<sup>26</sup>*If any man among you seem to be religious.*” The Greek definition of “*religion*” means “*ceremonial*” or “*pious.*”

How do you conduct yourself? Is it piously? How do you appear physically *pious*? Humanity as a whole, and Christians in particular, can appear pious or religious. They may observe Easter, with its eggs and rabbits or keep Christmas, with its decorated tree and giving presents among themselves. Or, they could remove all leavened bread from their houses during The Days of Unleavened Bread. It could be the taking of the barley (wheat) harvest and bringing it on Pentecost. All of these practices represent The Gospel of Circumcision (which demand human works). These are the only works that some Christians think they should do *religiously*.

These are *outward works* that other people may see you do in your religious practice. James said, “*Look I will show*



*you my faith by my works. Faith without works is dead.”* What type of works should there be? “<sup>26</sup>*If any man among you seem to be religious [piously acting like a Christian] and bridles not his tongue, but deceives his own heart, this man’s religion is vain.* [This show of piety is vain. Rather] <sup>27</sup>*Pure religion”* is something else.

James 1:27 Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction and to keep himself unspotted from the world.

## Man-Made Religions

Man-made religions allow a person to *show* his/her religion by *going to church, tithing, keeping pagan holidays* and doing all sorts of *physical works*. They use human effort to try and prove their *individual righteousness* to themselves, others and their God. During The Middle Ages, The Catholics were selling bones and relics to gain access to The Kingdom of God. Martin Luther was disturbed because everything had to do with what you *appeared* to do *righteously* before God. These were *works* that man did of his own accord in order to be a Christian.

It bothered Martin Luther so much that he broke off and split into Protestantism. So, the world ended up with hundreds of different denominations of Protestantism, while The Jews comprise The Orthodox, Reformed and Conservative groups. Each group continually divides and splits. The reason there are so many Judeo/Christian denominations is because they are all *based on human works*. This is mankind showing his own form of *righteousness* – not

Christ's (Matthew 6:33). Every religious argument concerns what you do or don't do and it is all based upon what seems right in a person's own eyes.

## Fatherless And Widows

James says very plainly that if you want to be a Christian with pure religion (which is undefiled and not corrupted), then you must "*visit the fatherless and widows.*" So, a Christian's obligation is to take care of the orphans and widows (they have no inheritance). Many widows and orphans have no one to lean upon. Paul was told to remember the poor; this is true Christian work. This is a physical activity that a Christian must do. The words, "*in their affliction,*" apply to those who do not have their needs cared for. It goes on, "*and to keep himself unspotted from the world.*" As a Christian, to show true Christianity, you must control your mouth. Stop judging people and stop accusing others. Be forgiving, as Christ was. Take care of the poor. Don't steal or covet. Don't be idolatrous and don't kill. Keep yourself from sinning. That is it. *There are no other physical religious requirements.* There are no other works. Ultimately, *agapè* (love) fulfills all of God's works.

Mark 10:17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running and kneeled to him and asked him, Good Master, what shall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

Christ was asked a very significant question, "<sup>17</sup>*What must I do to inherit eternal life?*" Christ said, "*Keep the commandments and do not sin.*" Do you believe Jesus?

## The Sabbath Shadow

The Sabbath is the only *Commandment* that doesn't tell you what sin is. It is *a shadow* of something to come. Christians keep The Sabbath by doing *good works*, just as Christ did. If you love God (keeping the first three *Commandments*), then you will love your neighbor as yourself. So in this sense, The Sabbath is *The Gospel*. The Sabbath Rest is *The Gospel*. Again, consider that as a Christian, from a standpoint of works, what must you do? The answer is to control your mouth, give to the poor and don't sin. That is it!

Mark 10:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And he answered and said to him, Master, all these have I observed from my youth. <sup>21</sup>Then Jesus beholding him loved him and said to him, One thing you lack: go your way, sell whatsoever you have and give to the poor and you shall have treasure in heaven: and come, take up your cross and follow me.

The rich man said, “<sup>20</sup>*Master, all these have I observed from my youth.*” Christ loved him because the man did not sin. The rich man added, “*What do I lack?*” Did Christ ask if he removed the leavened bread from his house during Unleavened Bread Days? Did Christ inquire if he went to a temporary house during The Feast of Tabernacles? Did Christ ask if he kept Easter or Christmas *Holy*? *No!* Instead Christ said, “<sup>21</sup>*sell whatsoever you have and give it to the poor.*” Christian works are equal to *don't accuse, help the poor and don't sin!*

Luke 19:1-9 <sup>1</sup>And Jesus entered and passed through

Jericho. <sup>2</sup>And, behold, there was a man named Zacchaeus, which was the chief among the publicans and he was rich. <sup>3</sup>And he sought to see Jesus who he was; and could not for the press, because he was little of stature. <sup>4</sup>And he ran before and climbed up into a sycamore tree to see him: for he was to pass that way. <sup>5</sup>And when Jesus came to the place, he looked up and saw him and said to him, Zacchaeus, make haste and come down; for to day I must abide at your house. <sup>6</sup>And he made haste and came down and received him joyfully. <sup>7</sup>And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, That he was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. <sup>8</sup>And Zacchaeus stood and said to the Lord; Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold. <sup>9</sup>And Jesus said to him, This day is salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a son of Abraham.

## The Rich Publican

In Luke 19:1-9, Christ went to a rich publican's house. The rich man, Zacchaeus, gave *half of his wealth to the poor* and if any thought he was dishonest, Zacchaeus said he would give back four times the amount. Christ said this man had *Salvation* (Luke 19:9). *No other works were required of him.* Do you believe Jesus Christ?

Galatians 2:15-21 <sup>15</sup>We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles, <sup>16</sup>Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ and

not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified. <sup>17</sup>But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God forbid. <sup>18</sup>For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor. <sup>19</sup>For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live to God. <sup>20</sup>I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me. <sup>21</sup>I do not frustrate the grace of God: for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.

**You should know what Christianity is. First, it is not a religion. It's not the keeping of days or years or physical things that people do. It really only entails *spiritual change*.**

**Christ said that Christians should worship God *spiritually* and not with physical works (John 4)! When you get down to *The Gospel*, it is all about The Kingdom of God. Most Christians don't know what The Kingdom of God is. "<sup>15</sup>*We who are Jews by nature and not sinners of the Gentiles.*" The Jews, by keeping *The Law*, were not sinners like The Gentiles who did not know *The Law*. "<sup>16</sup>*Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law.*" You are not forgiven of your sins by keeping any *physical Works* of The Law, but rather, "*by the faith of Jesus Christ even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ.*" Paul said this for a specific reason. He did it to show *the promise* of *The Gospel* although there are still two *gospels* – old and new. The Jews (The Cir-**

cumcision) had a different *gospel* than The Gentiles (The Uncircumcision) who did not have to keep *The Letter of The Law*.

### How To Read *The Book Of Galatians*

Many Christians read *Galatians* and think Paul was only saying they shouldn't be *circumcised*. Not so. Circumcision is just *the beginning of the works*. In Acts 15, Circumcision and *The Law of Moses* are not required. The word "works" is plural. It is "ergon" in Greek – which is "any type of religious work" whether paganism, *The Babylon Mystery System* or even of *The Law of Moses*, "<sup>16</sup>And not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified." People know they are not justified by the works of *The Law*. They are *justified* by the death of Christ. So, why do they perform *The Works of The Law*? It is not *merely* justification but much more. Instead, if you do the works of *The Law*, you are under a *curse*.

Paul explained that those who preach *the gospel* of works should be accursed. If you do *The Works of The Law*, then you are under a curse. This includes any works, aside from the ones that James said Gentile Christians should perform. If one believes that *Works of God's Law* are required to please God, then that person is under the curse. Why is this? It is because no one can keep *The Whole Law*.

If you keep *any part* of *The Law*, you must *keep it all* or else you are under the curse (James 2:10). "<sup>17</sup>*But if, while we seek to be justified by Christ, we ourselves also are found sinners, is therefore Christ the minister of sin? God for-*

*bid.*” As a Christian (with The Mind of God), you do not sin. The act of not sinning is a rare act of piety. Humans cannot stop from sinning. Controlling your mouth and giving to the poor is *true piety*. Humans must give to the needy. Paul said, “<sup>18</sup>*For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.*” When Christ was crucified, all your sins were forgiven.

### Sin After Forgiveness?

Do you want to begin sinning again after you have been forgiven? The answer should be “*no.*” You should not sin. So, this is not talking about the part of *The Law* that tells you what *sin* is. It is talking about that part of *The Law* that concerns physical works of piety. It is a monumental difference! “<sup>18</sup>*For if I build again the things which I destroyed, I make myself a transgressor.*” If you go *backward* and *start sinning again*, you will be guilty again. You are perverting *The True Gospel* by going backward. “<sup>19</sup>*for I through the law am dead to the law [do not sin any more] that I might live to God [striving to be like God].* <sup>20</sup>*I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I.*”

Now, if a Christian is *dead* to *The Law*, then it means you can't do any *works*. If you are *living in the flesh* and *doing human works*, then Christ is not living “*In You.*” If you do human works as an act of righteousness or piety, then Christ was not crucified for you. Paul said that this was like “*dung*” (Philippians 3)! However, he said, “*But Christ lives in me: and the life which I now live in the flesh [as a human being] I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me and gave himself for me.*” Now the whole answer is, “<sup>21</sup>*I do not frustrate the grace of God.*” These people were

depending upon *The Works of The Law*, such as building huge churches, beautiful edifices and creating pictures, statues and rosaries. It would include Monks going into caves and attempting to deny themselves. This concerns Christians following The Jewish religion or Christians following The Jewish Works of *The Law*.

### Admonition Of Pharisees

Remember, Christ's admonition about The Pharisees and Sadducees. Most Christians act like The Pharisees and Sadducees but do not know it. Jesus said, "*You are like white sepulchres.*" You look good on the outside but on the inside, you are full of dead men's bones. On the outside, you look very religious. You go to church and try to keep the days and the months *Holy* in the best way you can. You pray over the food, even in a restaurant, for the world to see *your piety*. Christ said, "*Your left hand is not to know what your right hand is doing.*"

Don't advertise your *religious deeds* by being so pious. When you fast, anoint yourself and look as if you are not fasting. When you give to the poor, make sure no one knows about it. When you pray, do it in a closet. This is another distinction. This is the difference between *man-made Christianity* and those who want to follow Christ.

One method has human works with traditions, just as though one is acting in *a religious play*. The Pharisees and Sadducees had their traditional oral laws and *The Law of Moses*, which also had *works*. The other method is to follow God who will lead you to *Salvation* into The Kingdom of God.



Then, “<sup>21</sup>*for if righteousness come by the law, then Christ is dead in vain.*” Whether you keep pagan days, Jewish religious works or if you keep *The Works of The Law* – it is “*all in vain.*” To Christ, it doesn't mean anything and the sadness of it all is that many *so-called Christians* don't understand *The True Gospel*.

Galatians 3:1-10 <sup>1</sup>O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, that you should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ has been evidently set forth, crucified among you? <sup>2</sup>This only would I learn of you, Received you the Spirit by the works of the law or by the hearing of faith? <sup>3</sup>Are you so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh? <sup>4</sup>Have you suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. <sup>5</sup>He therefore that ministers to you the Spirit and works miracles among you, does he it by the works of the law or by the hearing of faith? <sup>6</sup>Even as Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness. <sup>7</sup>Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham, saying, In you shall all nations be blessed. <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them [not the oral law of Jewish traditions].

You must look at all the pieces of the puzzle to find *The Real Gospel*. Paul asked The Galatians, “<sup>1</sup>*Who has be-*

*witched you?”* Who has confused and brainwashed you? Was it a promise that was given as *a gift* or was there something you had *to do* to get it? “<sup>3</sup>*Are you so foolish?”* Only The Spirit of God teaches you. You never learn by doing *works*.

When you throw leavened bread out of your house during The Days of Unleavened Bread, can this make you perfect? Do you need to throw out leavened bread to remind you that you are a sinner? Has The Spirit of God revealed this to you? Do you think that, when you make a temporary dwelling at The Feast of Tabernacles, it can make you perfect? Can any of these works lead you to *perfection*?

### Pagan Holidays

When you keep Christmas or Easter, does it make you like Christ? “*O foolish Galatians, who has bewitched you, <sup>4</sup>Have you suffered so many things in vain?* [Many were persecuted and crucified. Simply stated, God’s *Spirit* teaches you how to please God]. *<sup>6</sup>Even as Abraham believed God and it was accounted to him for righteousness.* [This is how Abraham kept *The Law* in God’s eyes]. *<sup>7</sup>Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham.”*

You must go back to The Abrahamic Covenant when Abraham received *The True Gospel*. “<sup>8</sup>*Before the gospel to Abraham, saying, in you shall all nations be blessed.*” This passage is a promise that *all* nations will be saved. *All nations* are going to be blessed with *this Gospel* – period.

## The Abrahamic Promise

Galatians 3:9-10 <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written [that is the reason Paul said] Cursed be everyone who follows this perverse gospel.

Everyone who is “*of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things, which are written in the book of the law to do them.*” Do not miss this important admonition. If it is a requirement to perform *The Works of The Law* in order to be a Christian, then you must do *every work* of *The Law*. The list includes sacrifice, circumcision, leavening removal, wave sheaf offering, putting blood on doorposts and not touching unclean animals. You must keep every part of *The Law* or you are accursed (Galatians 3:10). So states God's *word!* Do you believe God's *word?*

Men must be circumcised because that was *the first work*. You must put yourself in the company of Israel by performing sacrifices, washings, observing The Holy Days, The Sabbath, the new moons and all the other things they did. Ask yourselves, why would you put leavened bread out of the house but not put blood on your doorpost? On the second day, during The Week of Unleavened Bread, you should take the wave sheaf offering and offer it to The Father. Why don't people take the firstfruits and offer it at Pentecost? Why don't people blow trumpets or fast on The Day of Atonement? Why not go to a place of temporary dwelling during The Feast of Tabernacles? If you do *one* of these works, you're obligated to do all of

them. This is *scripturally* plain and direct! “*Know you therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham*” (Galatians 3). It is not by *The Works of The Law*.

## A Subject Greater Than Circumcision

This subject is far greater than The Circumcision. It has to do with *all The Works of The Law*. It covers every part of *The Law*. You cannot miss any one of *the works*. If you tithe, you had better do *The Whole Law*. This is one of the many reasons why you shouldn't tithe to the ministry. If you tithe, you had better read Malachi 3. The reason you tithe is so you will be physically blessed and your storehouses can be full. But, those who follow Christ are under a completely different blessing. It is a totally different system of doing *the work* based on need.

Galatians 3:8-10 <sup>8</sup>And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel to Abraham, saying, In you shall all nations be blessed. <sup>9</sup>So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. <sup>10</sup>For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith.

You may say you know you are not justified by *The Law*, but *Scripture* says that if you *don't do every part of The Law*, you are *cursed*. Why? It is because you are rejecting

**Christ's sacrifice.** You are rejecting what *The Law shadows* – Christ (Hebrews 10:1-2 and John 5:46). *The Works of The Law* point to Christ. This is the reason you don't sacrifice animals. You don't put leavened bread out of your house because you, yourself, are to be unleavened. You don't offer *the wave sheaf* during Unleavened Bread because Christ was already accepted by The Father. You don't give *the first fruits of the harvest* at Pentecost because the church has already received God's *Spirit*. If you study *The Scriptures* and put each piece together, you can assemble the puzzle and work towards *perfection*. Otherwise you can attempt to do *the works* that only make you look pious and ultimately result in *a curse*.

Galatians 3:11-16 <sup>11</sup>But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. <sup>12</sup>And the law is not of faith: but, The man that does them shall live in them. <sup>13</sup>Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree: <sup>14</sup>That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. <sup>15</sup>Brethren, I speak after the manner of man; Though it be but a man's Covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulls or adds thereto. <sup>16</sup>Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He said not And to seeds, as of many; but as of one And to your seed, which is Christ.

## Curse Of The Law

If Christ has *redeemed* you from the curse, you are not re-

quired to do any of *the works*, “*Being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangs on a tree: <sup>14</sup>That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles. [Salvation will come to the rest of the world] Through Jesus Christ, that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith.*” A man’s agreement is a contract between human beings. It is signed by both individuals and “*No man disannulls or adds thereto.* [Human physical contracts are binding]. <sup>16</sup>*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.*” This is *a covenant and a contract.* Part of The Abrahamic Covenant is a contract and part of it is *a promise with no conditions except faith.* “*Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made.*”

The blessings for all nations is a promise, “*He said not. And to seeds, as of many; but as of one* [so Abraham had *The Gospel of Jesus Christ* preached to him] *And to your seed, which is Christ.*” In summary, there are two types of gospels: 1) The Circumcision based on *works* and 2) The Uncircumcision which is not based on *works.* *The only human works* you are to do as a Christian is to keep your mouth shut, don’t sin, help others and give to the poor. That is your piety. That is your *life’s work.* That is it, in a nutshell.

Genesis 12:1-3 <sup>1</sup>Now the LORD had said to Abram, Get you out of your country and from your kindred and from your father’s house, to a land that I will show you: <sup>2</sup>And I will make of you a great nation and I will bless you and make your name great; and you shall be a blessing: <sup>3</sup>And I will bless them that bless you and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.

In The Abrahamic Covenant, Abraham was given 1) *Physical Promises* and 2) *Spiritual Promises*. Abraham is told to leave his country and go into a new land. The very first book, *Genesis*, begins to tell you about *The Gospel*. In *Galatians*, Paul said this was *The Gospel*. “<sup>1</sup>Now the LORD had said to Abram, Get you out of your country and from your kindred and from your father's house, to a land that I will show you: <sup>2</sup>And I will make of you a great nation. [This is a *physical promise* not a *spiritual promise*]. <sup>3</sup>And I will bless you.” And, Abraham prospered.

## Genesis 49

You are told that Abraham's seed (all of his children) would prosper and be blessed. This is an amazing *promise*. When you see wealthy nations prospering today, it is because they are the children of Abraham. “<sup>3</sup>And I will bless you and make your name great: and you shall be a blessing. [Although this is directly out of Galatians 3:8, these are all physical blessings]. *And I will bless them that bless you and curse him that curses you: and in you shall all families of the earth be blessed.*” This is a *spiritual blessing*. In *Galatians*, Paul is talking about Christ and not about *circumcision*. Now, you will understand, in greater degree, the time when *circumcision* became important.

Genesis 17:1-8 <sup>1</sup>And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram and said to him, I am the Almighty God; walk before me and be you perfect. <sup>2</sup>And I will make my Covenant between me and you and will multiply you exceedingly. <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my Covenant is with you

and you shall be a father of many nations. <sup>5</sup>Neither shall your name any more be called Abram, but your name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made you. <sup>6</sup>And I will make you exceeding fruitful and I will make nations of you and kings shall come out of you. <sup>7</sup>And I will establish my Covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God to you and to your seed after you. <sup>8</sup>And I will give to you and to your seed after you, the land wherein you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.

Abraham was 75 years old when he left The Babylonian area and was 99 years old when this covenant was made. Perfection was required of Abraham and *perfection* is required of True Christians who understand *the truth*. Jesus Christ said, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). Abraham was promised that, through his seed, he would be made into many nations. His *previous promise* was about blessings. Now, God’s *covenant* says, “*And I will make my covenant between me and you and will multiply you exceedingly. <sup>3</sup>And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him, saying, <sup>4</sup>As for me, behold, my covenant is with you and you shall be a father of many nations.*” This literally means physical nations throughout the ages.

## In The Beginning

In the beginning, *The Gospel* was preached to Adam and Eve, but they *blew it*. Adam, who was the first type of Christ, could have been *the father* of all nations. All na-



tions would have been blessed and Eve would have been *the mother* of all nations. Instead, she was replaced by Sarah. These were *the physical promises* made. “<sup>7</sup>*And I will establish my covenant between me and you and your seed after you in their generations for an everlasting Covenant, to be a God to you and to your seed after you* [this refers to the physical Kingdom of God]. <sup>8</sup>*And I will give to you and to your seed after you, the land* [Abraham was promised The Land of Canaan in this Covenant]. *Wherein you are a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.*”

*The role of circumcision* now comes into play.

Genesis 17:9-12 <sup>9</sup>And God said to Abraham, You shall keep my Covenant therefore, you and your seed after you in their generations. <sup>10</sup>This is my covenant, which you shall keep, between me and you and your seed after you; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. <sup>11</sup>And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token of the covenant betwixt me and you. <sup>12</sup>And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of your seed.

*No circumcision* was mentioned when *the spiritual blessing* was given to Abraham and his future nations (Genesis 12). All he had to do was have *the faith* to leave his country, “<sup>9</sup>*And God said to Abraham, You shall keep my covenant therefore.* [What is that *covenant*?] <sup>10</sup>*This is my covenant, which you shall keep.*” This is the reason The

Jews wanted to be *circumcised*. It concerns, “*Between me and you and your seed after you; every man child among you shall be circumcised.*”

This is *The Covenant of Circumcision*, or The Gospel of Circumcision. Israel thought The Abrahamic Covenant came through *The Law*. It was a physical government. It had to do with the land, which was The Land of Canaan. It concerned *the nations, kings and kingdoms*, “<sup>11</sup>*And you shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a token.*” This is the signature of *the covenant* between God and Abraham. Paul said that a human contract, if it is signed and confirmed, could *not* be broken. “*And he that is eight days old.*”

## Covenant When Christ Returns

*This same covenant* will be enforced when Christ *returns* and Israel enters the land that Christ restores during The Millennium (study Ezekiel 36-48). The Eighth Day shadows The Day of Judgment when *all* will be *saved*. That is why The Jews were *circumcised* on The Eighth Day, as it was The Day of Release. This is God’s Jubilee.

“<sup>12</sup>*And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of your seed.*” This is The Covenant of Circumcision. This is why The Jewish Christians were telling The Gentile Christians they had to be *circumcised*. As a sign, *circumcision* gave Israel *the promise*. They understood how *the promises* came through circumcision in The Abrahamic Covenant. *The promise* to Abraham was very

logical because they all understood *the promises* of Christ. Through *this covenant* came *the promises, blessings and prosperity of the physical Kingdom of God.*

As time went on, King David and King Solomon became rulers over the leading nations in the world. Different kings governed many nations and, in Solomon's time, they were prosperous beyond belief. *Those promises* were a blessing, not only to Israel, but to everyone. However, they refused to enter into God's *rest*.

When did *that rest* begin? It started on The Seventh Day with Adam and Eve. Just as Adam and Eve wanted to decide for themselves, the people wanted to decide for themselves what was *right* and *wrong*. They did not follow *The Will of God*. Adam and Eve could have taken fruit from The Tree of Life. But, because they did not, they could not enter God's *rest*. Neither David nor Solomon entered into God's *rest*. David was, indeed, *faithful* and will be in The Kingdom of God. However, The Tribes of Israel (as a nation) will not. They will be *saved later* (Romans 11).

## The Christian Promise

Genesis 22:1-2 <sup>1</sup>And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham and said, to him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. <sup>2</sup>And he said, Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love and get you into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell you of.

Examine *the promise*. It is based on the great test of Abra-

ham, “<sup>1</sup>*And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham.*” This was Abraham’s ultimate test. *The only work* that Abraham had to perform was to be obedient to God. Remember that *The Gospel* was already preached to Abraham. Now, something is to be *added* to this gospel, “<sup>2</sup>*And he said, Take now your son, your only son Isaac, whom you love and get you into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell you of.*”

### Sacrifice Of Isaac

Abraham took his son Isaac to a special mountain. Isaac could have been between 21 to 33 years of age, just as Christ was at His death. No one knows exactly. Isaac asked, “*Father, where is the offering?*” Abraham said, “*Lay down on the altar as the sacrifice.*” And Isaac said “*Yes, father.*” So he laid himself down to be killed. It was a matter of faith in God. Later, Christ said to His Father, “*Yes, Father, not my will be done, but your will be done.*” Abraham had to have *the faith* to believe and trust God.

Abraham believed that if he killed Isaac, then Isaac would be immediately resurrected. He trusted God enough to know that if he gave his only son (as God would give His only Son), then the son would be resurrected. Abraham understood absolutely and believed fully. He had total *faith* that Isaac would be *resurrected*.

Genesis 22:15-18 <sup>15</sup>And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time, <sup>16</sup>And said, By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your

son, your only son: <sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.

Notice that “<sup>15</sup>*the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time.*” The first time, it was a *physical covenant* with physical promises of prosperity. God is affirming all this. Remember how *The Law* requires *two witnesses*. The two witnesses here are 1) God and 2) the fact that God *cannot lie*. Combined, these are *the two witnesses*, “*By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing.*” *The covenant is past history*. Abraham’s *covenant with circumcision* is also *past history*.

*The covenant with Abraham was based upon physical promises, which were The Land of Canaan, kingship, nations and prosperity. Then God said, “<sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore [this is the whole world]. <sup>18</sup>And your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies [Israel will be the gatekeeper in New Jerusalem]. And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.”*

## Abrahamic Covenant

The Abrahamic Covenant had two parts: 1) a *physical part* that required *circumcision* or *physical works* and 2) a *spiritual part* which never required works (absolutely

*no works*). There is a great difference between the two. Even The Apostles were confused until Paul explained it to them. Paul was able to explain it because he learned it from Christ, Himself.

Mark 1:1 The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ,  
the Son of God.

Why are *The First Four Books of The New Testament* called *The Gospels*? One important clue lies in the words, “<sup>1</sup>*The beginning of the gospel.*” The word “gospel” in Greek is “*euaggelion.*” “*Euaggelion*” means “good news” or “angelic message from God.” The word “evangelist” comes from the word “angel.” “*Evangelism*” is “the good news” or “angelic message” from God. Remember that angels are God’s *messengers* to all mankind.

This is the beginning of the good news or the angelic message from God about Jesus Christ. *The four gospels* are all different and are, indeed, true *gospels*. In the beginning, *Matthew* deals with the genealogy of Christ. This shows Christ’s *inheritance* of *The Gospel*. Through *the promise of the inheritance* (Abraham’s seed), Christ had a right to the good news. *Jesus is The Good News.*

## Luke’s Account

Luke’s *Gospel* gives you the instructions for how Christians are supposed to live. John’s *Gospel* is different. In John 1:1, “*In the beginning was the word.*” Mark’s *Gospel* starts with the beginning of The Good News of Christ. John’s *Gospel* proves The Kingdom Message is from The Word of God – or God’s *word*.

**I Peter 5:13** The church that is at Babylon, elected together with you, salutes you; and so does Marcus my son.

**Mark was a relative of Peter's.** Peter regarded him as a son. Peter used Mark as a scribe at times. Here is his account.

**Mark 1:14-15** <sup>14</sup>Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. <sup>15</sup>And saying, The time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent you and believe the gospel.

**John 6:29** Jesus answered and said to them, This is the work of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent.

*The Gospel* is The Angelic Good News about Christ. It is important for you to believe what Christ, Himself said as The Word of God! His ministry started in Mark 1, “<sup>14</sup>Now after that John was put in prison.” This completed John, The Baptist's work. John, The Baptist will be *the best man* in the marriage between Christ and His Bride. John prepared the way for The Bridegroom. “*Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God. And saying, The time is fulfilled and the kingdom of God is at hand.*” The Covenant of Abraham had all the clues foretelling about *The Gospel*. But, to inherit certain rights in that *gospel*, you had to be *circumcised*. Now, a *different gospel* is presented, “<sup>15</sup>*God is at hand: repent you* [He is not asking you to be *circumcised* but rather asking you to] *repent you and believe the gospel.*”

Two things are required:

- 1) Have *a change of mind* to follow God's *will* and,
- 2) Have faith that God will *see to fruition all His promises*. Abraham had *that faith*. Abraham showed his *faith* by offering his son, Isaac. For that faith, he received *the promise of Eternal Life*.

Acts 1:4-6 <sup>4</sup>And, being assembled together with them, commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which said he, you have heard of me. <sup>5</sup>For John truly baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. <sup>6</sup>When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, will you at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?

## Apostles Assembled

All The Apostles were gathered together with Jesus Christ (Acts 1). Christ was teaching them during the forty days and forty nights prior to His ascension.

*“<sup>4</sup>And, being assembled together with them, [He, Christ] commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father, which said he, you have heard of me. <sup>5</sup>For John truly baptized with water; but you shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost not many days hence. <sup>6</sup>When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying, Lord, will you at this time restore again the kingdom to Israel?”*



The Apostles didn't know *The True Gospel* at that time. All they knew was The Gospel of Circumcision (about the physical kingdom). They knew The Abrahamic Covenant had promised The Land of Canaan, *the kings* and *the prosperity*. *But that was all they knew*. This belief continued until Paul had received his instructions from Christ (Galatians 3:16). Prior to that, no one knew *The True Gospel*. Paul said, "*He said not And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to your seed, which is Christ.*" Paul understood *the spiritual promise* of Jesus Christ and *The Gospel* of The Kingdom of God when Isaac was offered. Clearly, there is a great difference between these parts of *The Gospel*. *The Works of The Law* are still *meaningless* and *useless* today.

Galatians 4:10-11 <sup>10</sup>You observe days and months and times and years. <sup>11</sup>I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.

Paul explains very plainly, "<sup>10</sup>*You observe days and months and times and years.*" Is he talking about pagan days? No, he is not. They had already *left those days*. But then, they returned to *the beggarly elements of days and years* again. These are just different days. Paul said, "<sup>11</sup>*I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain.*" Specifically, this tells you all about *the sacrifice* of Isaac and the life of Hagar and Ishmael. It also tells you about the difference between *the physical part* and *the spiritual part* of The Abrahamic Covenant.

Galatians 4:19-25 <sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you, <sup>20</sup>I desire to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. <sup>21</sup>Tell me, you

that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law? <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two Covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children.

Paul addresses these people as, “<sup>19</sup>*My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you.* [He was angry and said] *For I stand in doubt of you.*” They were tithing, taking leavening out of their houses and running off to build a temporary dwelling. “<sup>21</sup>*Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law?*” He wants mankind to know what *The Law* is in *Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy*.

These are The Five Books of *The Old Testament*. “*For the law having a shadow of good things to come and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices, which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect*” (Hebrews 10:1).

## Two Sons Of Abraham

Paul says, “<sup>22</sup>*For it is written, that Abraham had two sons* [This text brings you back to The Abrahamic Covenant. Regarding the two sons, he said] *The one by a bondwoman* [slave] *the other by a freewoman.* [However, there are problems] <sup>23</sup>*But he who was of the bondwoman was born after*

*the flesh* [by human effort] **but he of the freewoman was by promise.** [This was a *miracle* and a *gift*. The promise to Isaac was that he was born *free*. Then, the clarification] <sup>24</sup>***Which things are an allegory***" (Galatians 4:22-24). There are two different types. Hagar through Ishmael is one while Sarah through Isaac is another.

Remember, (humanly and metaphorically speaking) Abraham was like God, The Father and Isaac was like The Son, Jesus Christ. Hagar also signifies (in duality) one thing and Ishmael signifies another. *The Holy Scriptures* tell you what each means, "***For these are the two covenants*** [in Israel, this included *The Law of Moses*, because they were unconverted] ***the one from the Mount Sinai*** [*The Law of Moses*], ***Which genders to bondage, which is Agar*** [Hagar] <sup>25</sup>***For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children.***" He is talking about Jerusalem in his day. There was a *temple*, The Holy Place, wherein dwelt *The Shekinah*, which is The Glory of God. In order for God to stay with them, be their God and have *the promises* according to Abraham, they were required to do all *The Works of The Law*. *The temple* was the center for performing *The Works of The Law*!

It seems ludicrous to have to throw leavened bread out and bring in barley harvests *forever* in order to become a Son of God. It even sounds funny when you say it that way. Paul says, "<sup>25</sup>***For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children***" (Galatians 4:25). They are in slavery. *The Law* intended *those works* to be a *form of slavery*. *Those works* were only to *bring them to Christ*. They were

in slavery when they had to do *all The Law*! This was only supposed to last until the appointed time.

## Bondage Of Works

The bondage of *The Works of The Law* reminds the people of their sin. That was The Jewish Religion based on *The Law of Moses*. The Jewish *form of piety* was based on *the physical promises* of The Abrahamic Covenant which required the men to be *circumcised*. You could not miss any of *the works*, because if you missed one, you would be *under the curse*, which meant *Christ's sacrifice* was in vain.

Can you now understand why Paul was so angry? It should make all of you angry to have been fooled by your so-called Christian leaders! Paul said, "*Be you angry and sin not*" (Ephesians 4:26). What is *The Gospel* and what is *The Kingdom*? "*26But Jerusalem which is above is free*" (Galatians 4:26). Freedom means that no one has the authority to tell you what to do, physically, to receive *the promise*. That is why God had to *write His laws in your heart and mind* or *change your nature*. There is *no need for anyone* to tell you what Works of *The Law* you need to do (Romans 2:12-29). Through God's Spirit, you will not deliberately sin. If you slip, you will repent and, with God's help, you sin no more.

"*The law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient*" (I Timothy 1:9). You only *need The Law* when you are unrighteous and a sinner. You must have a *schoolmaster*, which is *The Law*, to remind you to be like Christ! "*26But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.*" Indeed, the pieces of the

puzzle are now showing *a more complete picture of The Plan of God.*

## Sin Added The Law

Galatians 3:17-22 <sup>17</sup>And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. <sup>18</sup>For if the inheritance be of the law it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. <sup>19</sup>Wherefore then serves the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. <sup>20</sup>Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

*The purpose of The Law is told to you in Galatians 3:17. The Law is Holy, it is just and it is good. No one should be against it, “<sup>17</sup>And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.” Keeping The Works of The Law doesn't change anything in the promise. It is a complete gift.*

Christ said, “*not one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass*

*from the law, till all be fulfilled*” (Matthew 5:17-19). That is, until God’s *plan* is completed. “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serves the law?*” He is not talking about sin, rather he is talking about *The Works of The Law*. “*It was added, because of transgressions.*” This was until a point in time when *The Letter of The Law ceases*.

## Why The Law Was Given

So, *The Law* was given to allow you, a sinner and a transgressor, to be able to come to Christ. *The Law* allowed you to understand that you were a sinner but when Christ came, He bought you with the payment of His death. *The Works of The Law* are no longer required. Christ came, died and was resurrected. *New Christians*, who understand this, can skip *The Works of The Law completely*.

Romans 4:20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God.

*Romans* tells you that *The Law* was made because all are sinners (Romans 5:20). To inherit The Kingdom of God, Christ said you must *repent* and *believe The Gospel*. Jesus Christ plainly tells you what The Kingdom of God is.

Matthew 18:1-4 <sup>1</sup>At the same time came the disciples to Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? <sup>2</sup>And Jesus called a little child to him and set him in the midst of them. <sup>3</sup>And said, Verily I say to you, Except you be converted and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. <sup>4</sup>Whosoever therefore shall humble himself

as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

When *The Bible* was divided into chapters and verses, a great deal of meaning was lost. When the context does not flow, the message does not progress in the proper, continuous manner.

## Kingdom Of God

The subject here is The Kingdom of God. Notice, it is also called *The Kingdom of Heaven*. Where is New Jerusalem? Is it in Heaven? Christians misuse *this Scripture* to say that you can and will go to heaven. No! It says "*kingdom of heaven.*" It doesn't say "*kingdom in heaven.*" It is *The Kingdom of Heaven*. Don't you pray, "*Your kingdom come your will be done on earth as it is in heaven?*" This will be done *on earth*. This is another piece of the puzzle, "*2And Jesus called a little child to him and set him in the midst of them. 3And said, Verily I say to you, Except you be converted and become as little children, you shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. 4Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.*" To enter God's *kingdom*, you must be *humble* and *innocent* like a little child. You must be open, teachable and seek God's *will*. "*Repentance*" is "*a change of mind.*"

God's *word* tells you how to change. Don't let the ideas of men tell you what you should do. This concerns the example of the converted.

Matthew 18:10-14 <sup>10</sup>Take heed that you despise not

one of these little ones; for I say to you, That in heaven their angels do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. <sup>11</sup>For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. <sup>12</sup>How think you? If a man have a hundred sheep and one of them be gone astray, does he not leave the ninety and nine and goes into the mountains and seeks that which is gone astray? <sup>13</sup>And if so be that he find it, verily I say to you, he rejoices more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. <sup>14</sup>Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish.

## Save The Whole World

God's *will* is to save the whole world. When you honestly and sincerely *repent*, you are *saved*. You will not be lost. Compare what it means to be *lost* and what it means to be *restored*. This word "*saved*" in Greek means "*restore*." What must be restored is that which *was lost*.

Genesis 3:22-24 <sup>22</sup>And the LORD God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live for ever: <sup>23</sup>Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. <sup>24</sup>So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.

After Adam and Eve sinned in The Garden of Eden, God said, "*Behold, the man is become as one of us.*" God was



not talking to Himself. He was talking to everybody in heaven (who is like you), including The Sons of God, The 24 Elders and *the angels*. They all look like you.

God said, "*The man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, less he put forth his hand and take also of the tree of life and eat and live for ever.*" The Tree of Life was lost. Christ came to restore the opportunity to receive *Eternal Life*. "<sup>23</sup>*Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. <sup>24</sup>So he drove out the man: and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life.*" Generations of people knew about *The Cherubims* that were placed in *the garden* to guard The Tree of Life. *Eternal Life* was lost, so Christ had to come to restore *Eternal Life*.

What is The Kingdom of God? It is *the good news* for all mankind! It is *The Angelic Good News of The Message from God*. God's Son, Jesus Christ, came to restore *Eternal Life* in The Kingdom of God.

Luke 17:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God comes not with observation: <sup>21</sup>Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.

How different is The Kingdom of God from what Peter, The Apostles or The Jews thought? "<sup>20</sup>*And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when The Kingdom of God*

*should come.”* They all, even The Apostles, were looking for a physical kingdom. But *“He answered them and said, The Kingdom of God comes not with observation.”*

The Kingdom of God is The Good News that Christ brought. He *saved* you so that you can have *Eternal Life*. This is *not* a physical kingdom. *“<sup>21</sup>Neither shall they say, Lo here! Or, lo there! For, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.”* It is a *spiritual kingdom* “*within you*” and requires only *spiritual works*. This is “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27).

John 3:1-6 <sup>1</sup>There was a man of the Pharisees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews: <sup>2</sup>The same came to Jesus by night and said to him, Rabbi, we know that you are a teacher come from God: for no man can do these miracles that you do, except God be with him. <sup>3</sup>Jesus answered and said to him, Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. <sup>4</sup>Nicodemus said to him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother’s womb and be born? <sup>5</sup>Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say to you, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. <sup>6</sup>That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

## Kingdom Within You

Theologically, there has been a great debate over what Christ meant when He said, “*The Kingdom of God is within you*” (Luke 17:21). All the theologians needed to do was *believe what Christ said* and they could have understood.

Each person needs to be reborn into another being, *but, not just yet*. If a person is not *reborn*, then they cannot enter *the kingdom*.

If The Apostles asked you, “*Are you going to restore the kingdom of Israel at this time,*” what would you tell them? That is not what *the kingdom* is. “*That which is born of the flesh, is flesh* [as long as you are human you are in the *flesh*] *that which is born of the Spirit is Spirit.*” The good news about Christ is that you have a *promise* that God *will eventually save The Whole World*. It is in God’s plan for all mankind to inherit *Eternal Life*. That is *The True Gospel*. You are to be a Spiritual Son of God, be just like Him and be in His family!

Revelation 21:1-2 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.

The Kingdom *fulfills* The Sabbath Rest. This is what The Sabbath is all about. The Israelites *never* entered into God’s *rest*. They came close in the physical sense during Solomon’s day but their problem was that they didn’t believe, “<sup>1</sup>*And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea.* <sup>2</sup>*And I, John saw The holy city.*”

Paul said that Christians are from Jerusalem, which is in *heaven* (Galatians 4:26). *It is not Jerusalem with The Physical Laws of The Temple of that time*. It was “*coming down*

*from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband.”* So what is New Jerusalem? Christ said, *“I go to prepare a place for you”* (John 14:2). His Bride, *the church*, is dressed in jewels. Many wealthy men satiate themselves and their families with all the luxuries money can buy. After buying more luxuries than they can possibly use, they begin to do good things for others. They build hospitals, orphanages, libraries, museums, resorts, hotels and parks. They create many nonprofit organizations, foundations and endowments. They donate their mansions and gardens to the public.

### **Richest Being In The Universe**

God is the richest being in the universe. God owns everything. You may ask, *“What is God’s purpose?”* It is to *reproduce* Himself so every human being can become one of His Sons! God has the power to allow you to *live* forever. God is reproducing Himself through His Sons and The Bride (the church). What is The Kingdom of God? It is New Jerusalem descending down out of *heaven* and is The Mother of everyone. It will be the dwelling place of The Bride (the church) and Christ, The Groom. This is *the promise* you have through Abraham. It is *The True Gospel* of The Kingdom. *The True Gospel* is about a *spiritual kingdom* where you will be *spiritual* Sons of God. When God reproduces Himself, God will be *“all and in all”* (I Corinthians 15:28). God’s Kingdom is God reproducing Himself into a Family of Nations. That means *Salvation for each and every one of you*. It is God’s *will and shall be fulfilled*.

## Chapter 8

### MARRIAGE – THE GREAT MYSTERY

About 6,000 years ago, Adam and Eve were given the opportunity to obtain Eternal Life. This Gift would have passed on to all subsequent generations. However, they failed and everyone had to die.

Christ appeared on earth about 2,000 years ago to give His life, “*to save that which was lost*” (Matthew 18:11). God does not intend to lose any of His sheep (Matthew 18:14). Christ mentions the story of the shepherd who has 99 sheep and looks for the one that is lost. He does not rest until He finds the one that got lost. This is a very important concept to understand. This story concerns *the most fantastic promise* that has been given to you. God will not rest until *all are saved!* Eventually, everyone will enter God’s Spiritual Kingdom. *The True Gospel* is God’s plan for all creation to be saved. Everyone will be saved but not as physical beings. All will be *Spiritual Beings* in a *Spiritual Kingdom*. God’s Library records everyone who will be in New Jerusalem. They are written in *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. Everyone who will enter The Kingdom of God, when New Jerusalem appears, is written in *The Lamb’s Book of Life*.

#### Why Written

Why was *The Book of Life* written at all? Only those who

become worthy are written in *The Book of Life*. Everyone must repent. They must qualify just as Christ, The Son of God, had to *qualify*. Those who do not believe and have not repented will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Matthew 18:11 declares that *the purpose* for Christ's coming is "to save that which was lost." This means He will restore *everything back to the way it was* in The Garden of Eden. This Chapter holds the most important piece of the puzzle in *The Bible*. It is one of the major events in the process of restoring everyone and everything. This is the whole reason Jesus Christ came to earth.

Matthew 19:3-8 <sup>3</sup>The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause? <sup>4</sup>And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning made them male and female, <sup>5</sup>And said, For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they both shall be one flesh? <sup>6</sup>Wherefore they are no more two, but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder. <sup>7</sup>They say to him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement and to put her away? <sup>8</sup>He said to them, Moses because of the hardness of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.

As you read and study *The Bible*, it is best to try to understand it from *the restoration* point of view. "<sup>3</sup>*The Pharisees also came to him, tempting him* [they tested Him all the time] *and saying to him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cause?*" They were asking if it is

permissible to obtain a divorce. The response was, “<sup>4</sup>*And he answered and said to them, Have you not read, that he which made them at the beginning.*” Always be mindful to start at the beginning of *The Book of Genesis*. What was it like between the man and the woman at that time? *The Bible* says that God made them male and female. Notice, there was *no marriage ceremony* between Adam and Eve. Why were they not married? It is because Eve came directly out of Adam. Do you mean to say they were living Common Law? Of course not! Genesis says God “*made them male and female.*” As male and female, where did they come from? They came from God. God said, “<sup>5</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave father and mother and shall cleave to his wife: and they two shall be one flesh?*” Literally, they were one flesh but now they are two separate entities.

## Helpmate Required

When Adam was created, he needed a helpmate. In Genesis 2, God had Adam fall asleep and then removed a part of him. The English word is “*rib.*” The Hebrew word means “*side.*” God took a bone out of Adam’s side and created Eve. Yet, she was Adam. They were not two. They were truly *one*. Hence, they did not need to be married. They were already *one flesh*. “*Wherefore they are no more two [they aren’t two] but one flesh. What therefore God has joined together, let not man put asunder*” (Matthew 19:6). Eve, being brought forth out of Adam, proves they were, literally, one flesh. That is why she carried Adam’s name. Being *one flesh*, how could they have been put asunder? How could there have been a divorce? How could Adam have put her away? This essentially means that it would

have been necessary to cut them in half. “*They [Pharisees] say to him, Why did Moses then command to give a writing of divorcement and to put her away?*” (Matthew 19:7). The question posed was why a man (under *The Law*) could divorce his wife. “*8He [Jesus] said to them, Moses because of the hardness [unrepentant] of your hearts suffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not so.*” Christ was required to come and restore marriage. He came to *save* human life and, you will find, it is saved through marriage!

## Marriage Is Central

You will discover that everything written in *The Bible* is about marriage. In fact, the most important part of the puzzle to understand is that everything from *Genesis* to *Revelation* is all about marriage. In the beginning, Adam and Eve were *one flesh* literally. She was “*bone of his bone.*” It is the same reason that each of you must, one day, become *one* with The Son and The Father. Moses permitted divorce because the ancient Israelites did not have *love*. When someone has hardness in their heart, they lack love (God’s *agàpè* love). Humans can only love because of passion or compatibility. Since God, through Moses, knew they didn’t have love, He permitted men to divorce (put away) their wives. You must understand that if divorce was not permitted for carnal individuals, they would kill each other. They never regarded marriage as being one flesh. Their wives were not perceived as “*bone of their bone and flesh of their flesh.*” How did this come about and what was the reason?

Matthew 19:9-10 <sup>9</sup>And I say to you, Whosoever shall



put away his wife, except it be for fornication and shall marry another, commits adultery: and whoso marries her which is put away does commit adultery. <sup>10</sup>His disciples say to him, If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.

Christ's Disciples did not understand how to be *one flesh* with a wife. They did not know God's *agàpè* love. How could a husband and wife be the same flesh? Many books have been written about what keeps married people together. One book declares that you must be compatible. Other books claim that man and woman stay together because of their passion or emotions (*eros*) for each other.

### Why Accept Each Other?

Another reason why a person accepts someone else is because of "*philia*." You seem to be compatible and you like to do the same things. Because you enjoy doing the same things, you accept each other without wanting the other to change. So, it seems men and women marry on the basis of two points: 1) passion and/or 2) compatibility. But, that is not what it takes to make a marriage last for life. It takes God's *agàpè* love. Having *agàpè* love for each other is the only way to become one flesh.

Ephesians 5:25-32 <sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church and gave himself for it; <sup>26</sup>That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word. <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their

wives as their own bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself. <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourishes and cherishes it, even as the Lord the church: <sup>30</sup>For we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones. <sup>31</sup>For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and shall be joined to his wife and they two shall be one flesh. <sup>32</sup>This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.

*“<sup>25</sup>Husbands, love your wives.”* The word for “love” is “*agàpè*.” In Greek, it means “*giving to the other*” or in The King James translation, it means “*charity!*” Soon, you will see what part of marriage was lost in The Garden of Eden. Husbands must “*agàpè*” their wives. Then Paul explains what “*agàpè love*” is by stating, “*even as Christ, also loved [agàpè] the church and gave himself for it* [this is self-sacrificing one’s own life for the other] <sup>26</sup>*That he might sanctify [making it special] and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word, <sup>27</sup>That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle.”*

## Significant Fairy Tales

Many fairy tales tell the story of marriage. The story of Cinderella (preparing and waiting for the prince) favorably compares with the account of Jesus Christ and His Bride. Snow White (who was poisoned by the female Satan) and The Seven Dwarfs (seven churches) are, also, about Jesus Christ and The Bride. *The Wizard of Oz* with its song “*Over the Rainbow*” is a story about Jesus Christ and The Bride (Dorothy) who was lost while trying to find the road home. On this basis, it can be said, “<sup>27</sup>*that he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrin-*

*kle or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish [no flaws]. <sup>28</sup>So ought men to love their wives as their own [what?] bodies. He that loves his wife loves himself [why is this? If she is of his bone, flesh and blood, then they will love each other] <sup>29</sup>For no man ever yet hated his own flesh.”*

How different was the first Godly marriage from all other marriages after that? With Eve virtually coming out of Adam, they were one flesh and one bone. They would need to become divided (severed) in order to be divorced. It is obvious that they would, then, both die.

### Marriage And The Passover

Now, what happens at The Passover? Christ said that unless you eat “*My Body*” and drink “*My Blood*,” you have no part of Me. He was talking about a marriage. It was about one flesh, “<sup>30</sup>*For we are members of his body, of his flesh and of his bones.* <sup>31</sup>*For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother and shall be joined to his wife and they two shall be one flesh.* <sup>32</sup>*This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.*” This is a story revealing The Purpose of The Entire Word of God. This is a story all about marriage. When Christ restores (saves) that which was lost, He is saving *the original marriage state*. This is *Salvation* – which is becoming *one flesh*. If Adam was a type of Christ (Romans 5:14), then Paul says the marriage makes *the church* – The Body of Christ. It is a great mystery. *The Bridegroom and The Church are to be married to each other.*

If Adam and Eve kept God’s way of marriage instead of

following Satan, they would have remained in The Garden of Eden with God. Eve's children could have lived there. Adam could have been *the appointed Christ-figure!* When Christ came to *save* (restore) sinners (the world) and give *Eternal Life*, He did it by restoring marriage. Most follow *Satan's system of marriage* which is based upon women being *sex objects* and men dominating the women (Genesis 3:1-16). When Adam and Eve ate the forbidden fruit, both became aware they were naked (Genesis 3:10-11). In Satan's marriage system, women become the husband's property.

Deuteronomy 24:1 When a man has taken a wife and married her and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he has found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement and give it in her hand and send her out of his house.

Moses permitted divorce because of the hardness of their (The Israelites) hearts. Paul said the husband should *agapè* his wife or love her as he loves his own body. Husbands did not have *agapè* love for their wives, so they were allowed to divorce.

## Marriage And Baal

The word "*marry*" in Hebrew is "*baal.*" "*Baal*" was *the prominent god of fertility* for The Canaanites. Baalism is all about sex. Therefore, "*A man has taken a wife and*" married ("*baal*") her. "*Baal*" was a master or a lord of fertility and she became his property. So, when Israel became a whore and went after "*baal,*" God says she was married to another.

Israel literally changed from being one flesh with God to becoming the property of “*Baal*.” Check the word “*marry*” in Deuteronomy 24:1 (in a concordance) to be sure it is “*baal*.” Understand that the word “*marry*,” throughout *The Law*, is always “*baal*.” How did it change from the time, in the beginning, when Adam and Eve were one flesh?

Adam loved that flesh because it was his own. Adam listened to his wife because she was his own flesh. It may be difficult for you to understand why God placed women in *the position of slavery*. When a person is under *Baal* they become a slave to Baal. True Christians are “*doulos*” or “*slaves*” to their husband, Christ. According to *The Law*, *The Israelites* are just as much a slave to *Baal*. *The time of release* will come later. How did all this change from true marriage (based upon *agàpè* and bone of bone and flesh of flesh) to property? After all, slaves and women were bought and sold. How did this happen?

Genesis 3:11-16 <sup>11</sup>And he said, Who told you that you were naked? Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat? <sup>12</sup>And the man said, The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree and I did eat. <sup>13</sup>And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat. <sup>14</sup>And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life: <sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity between you and the woman and between your seed and her seed; it shall

bruise your head and you shall bruise his heel. <sup>16</sup>To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception; in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.

How did marriage change? The original marriage wasn't based on the man being the head or lord, but on the man being the head by means of loving his flesh (his wife). This is a totally different situation and cannot be *put asunder*. When your wife is your property, then you can divorce her, sell her and get rid of her, but never by murder. The text says, "<sup>11</sup>*Have you eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded you that you should not eat?*"

## Finding Fault

A man will always say that it was his wife's fault. The claim is that, "*My wife did it or it was her idea.*" "<sup>12</sup>*And the man said, The woman whom you gave to be with me, she gave me of the tree and I did eat.*" This is after Adam and Eve ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. Adam did it because he loved his wife. Those who love their wives have a difficult time saying "*No*" to them. As a man, I can say that it is quite tough, isn't it?

Well, it was pretty difficult for Adam too. However, this was no excuse. He should have thought of his wife and said, "*We better not take that fruit.*" Instead, "<sup>3</sup>*And the LORD God said to the woman, What is this that you have done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me and I did eat.*" The chain reaction begins. First, Adam blames Eve and, then, Eve blames the serpent.

## Blame The Serpent

It is never the fault of the perpetrator because human nature always finds someone else to blame. This is the process of never accepting the blame and always passing the buck, “<sup>14</sup>*And the LORD God said to the serpent, Because you have done this, you are cursed above all cattle.*”

In God’s eyes, Satan was placed beneath all the other animals. He was the most carnal, beastlike and poisonous, “*and above every beast of the field; upon your belly shall you go and dust shall you eat all the days of your life: <sup>15</sup>And I will put enmity [hostility] between you and the woman and between your seed [Satan, also, has children] and her seed [her children]; it shall bruise your head [speaking about Christ] and you shall bruise his heel. <sup>16</sup>To the woman he said, I will greatly multiply your sorrow and your conception.*” Bearing children comes with pain. Eve went through this pain and will again in the future when she sees her children thrown into The Lake of Fire. This will be a painful sight, “*in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.*” There is the indictment.

## The Change In Marriage

Marriage changed, substantially, at this point. This was not the way things were supposed to be in the very beginning. No longer was Adam *head* as the husband. He was, now, the master. He was like *Baal*. Since then, men could go out and buy women as possessions. They became a *product*. That is how it all began. Why must women be handled like *chattel*? This is their penalty for following

Satan. God gave them over to Satan's *system of marriage*. So Christ was sent to *save* that which was lost. Christ had to *save* His marriage. He had to come and sacrifice Himself. Afterward, through His death and resurrection, He could marry His church. Christ must *restore* marriage to the way it was in the beginning. You will need an even greater understanding of this when you read Matthew 19, "<sup>10</sup>*If the case of the man be so with his wife, it is not good to marry.*" This is amazing!

There is a complete difference between God's marriage and man's marriage (Satan's system). Man's marriage is based on *eros* and *philia* while God's marriage is based on *agàpè* love. Paul said, "*God's marriage is a great mystery.*" Christ must restore marriage to where both mates love each other as one flesh and with *agàpè* love. Was there a better way for God to *save* His creation than having to require His own Son to die? His Son had to die to prove He was worthy (*agàpè*) of His wife. This meant that Christ had to buy back or *redeem* His wife. Why do you have to have a Savior and why didn't Adam qualify? It was all because of *free choice*.

## Two Choices

In the beginning, God gave Adam and Eve two choices. He said, "*Look, Adam, you can be Savior and you can be The Christ.*" He went on to say, "*Eve, you can be the mother of all the living.*" Here is The Tree of Life and God, Himself, is in The Garden. *Agàpè* was there! God is love. They could have eaten from The Tree of Life at that time.

Love (*agàpè*) is the fulfillment or the completion of *The*



**Law** (Romans 13:10). So if God was with them and they were *One* with God (all joined together, as one), then they would all be *One* (married as one flesh). They would have had *Eternal Life*. All their children could have lived forever and would not have had to go through what mankind has had to endure. But, they chose The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil and said, “*No, we do not choose to follow your way. We choose to follow our own ideas of right and wrong.*” Do you know why Satan is *the father of lies*? First, he believes his own lies. There is never a better liar than a person who believes his or her own lies. There are people who will lie to you and, all the while, believe they are telling you the truth. By using deception, they never tell you a total lie. Part of what they say is true. When Satan tried to tempt Eve with the fruit, Eve said, “*God says we shouldn’t eat it because when we eat it we are going to die.*” And what did Satan say, “*You are not going to die.*” He was telling her the truth, but he didn’t tell her that they would need to die, be resurrected and then be saved. Also, he didn’t tell her there is a *first death* and a *second death*.

### Satan Deceived Eve

Satan deceived Eve by reasoning with her. In essence, he said, “*Look, the reason God doesn’t want you to eat the fruit of The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil is because you will become wise and know right from wrong.*” Eve wanted to decide for herself what was right or wrong by the hard knocks of trial and error. Eve bought into the lie because Satan told the truth but only in part. Eve was not going to die instantly. Now, do you see what must be restored? Christ came to *save oneness with God*. God’s pur-

*pose* is to become *all in all* (I Corinthians 15). God is *agapè love*. Christ came to restore marriage, as was *planned* from the very beginning.

Matthew 22:1-13 <sup>1</sup>And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables and said, <sup>2</sup>The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son. <sup>3</sup>And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. <sup>4</sup>Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed and all things are ready: come to the marriage. <sup>5</sup>But they made light of it and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: <sup>6</sup>And the remnant took his servants and entreated them spitefully and slew them. <sup>7</sup>But when the king heard thereof, he was wroth: and he sent forth his armies and destroyed those murderers and burned up their city. <sup>8</sup>Then said he to his servants, The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. <sup>9</sup>Go you therefore into the highways and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage. <sup>10</sup>So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furnished with guests. <sup>11</sup>And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment: <sup>12</sup>And he said to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. <sup>13</sup>Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Jesus Christ spoke specifically about marriage and *the kingdom* (Matthew 22). However, it is vital to note that *The Bible* and everything from Genesis 1 to Revelation 22 is all about *marriage*. This is an important part of the puzzle. God's marriage is about husband and wife becoming *One*. God is reproducing Himself "*In You*." Christ said, "*Unless you eat My body and drink My blood, you can have nothing to do with Me*." However, this means that *certain ones* will be excluded from *The Marriage*.

### Marriage Agreement

*Passover* (Communion) was The Marriage Agreement when The Disciples ate His *body* and drank His *blood*. They became *one flesh*. There is a profound meaning behind this, as you can already perceive. This insight often occurs when a person eats the bread and drinks the wine. "<sup>1</sup>*And Jesus answered and spoke to them again by parables and said, <sup>2</sup>The kingdom of heaven is like to a certain king, which made a marriage for his son*" (Matthew 22). The subject is The Kingdom of God and New Jerusalem. Christ came to restore marriage back to the way it was intended from the beginning. "<sup>3</sup>*And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come.*" When this marriage took place between The King's Son and His Bride, most assumed The Bride was *the church*. But that is not accurate.

Christ is designated as The Giver while The Bride is *the church* (Ephesians 5). Remember, The Guests are not The Bride, they are The Guests. "<sup>3</sup>*And sent forth his servants to call them that were bidden to the wedding: and they would not come. <sup>4</sup>Again, he sent forth other servants, saying, Tell*

*them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared my dinner: my oxen and my fatlings are killed and all things are ready [so they were invited]: come to the marriage.”*

What is the marriage? It is The Passover. It is taking *the bread and wine* so they can become *one flesh*. This is The Agreement. *The Passover is a contractual agreement*. It is The Marriage Contract between Christ and *the church*. The Marriage is The Feast. The Marriage Feast is the dinner, which will come later. There is a big difference between *The Contract*, which was *The New Testament* and *The Feast*. *The New Testament is The New Contract* between Christ and His Bride. The invitation is sent out to invite people to The Wedding. So, *The Guests* are different from *The Bride*. *The individuals* who were invited to the marriage *treated the occasion with disdain*. Hence, *judgment* will be forthcoming. Later, you will understand that The Return of Christ and The Marriage Feast is The Time of The Judgment. *Understand this time-frame correctly!*

## The Guest Roster

“<sup>8</sup>Then said he to his servants, *The wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not worthy. <sup>9</sup>Go you therefore into the highways.*” Of course, the first guests to be invited were all of *Israel*, but *they missed out*. Then, they go and call others, “*and as many as you shall find, bid to the marriage.*” <sup>10</sup>*So those servants went out into the highways and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good.*” This is The Resurrection of The Just and those to be judged (John 5:29). Remember that The Parable of Wheat and Tares is about the time when Christ said, “*The Wheat is The World and The Seed is The Good Seed of*

*The Son. The Tares are The Children of Satan.*” So, these Guests were invited to the wedding (both the good and the bad). This is the time of The Great Judgment and The Resurrection. It, also, spans a great period of time. The Marriage Feast lasts for a long period indeed, “*and the wedding was furnished with guests. <sup>11</sup>And when the king came in to see the guests, he saw there a man which had not on a wedding garment.*” This is *The Judgment Period*.

Remember, you must be dressed in *The Wedding Garment of Righteousness*. Can you remember back to Cinderella when twelve o’clock starts to strike? The stagecoach turns back into a pumpkin and all the fine clothes turn to rags. This scene corresponds with, “<sup>12</sup>*And he said to him, Friend, how came you in hither not having a wedding garment? And he was speechless. <sup>13</sup>Then said the king to the servants, Bind him hand and foot and take him away and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.*” These will be those farthest from New Jerusalem and the access to The Tree of Life.

## Christ And The Church

So The Wedding is between Christ (The Groom) and *the church* (The Bride). The Guests are those who are resurrected at The Time of The Resurrection (both the *good* and the *bad*).

John 5:21-29 <sup>21</sup>For as the Father raises up the dead and quickens them; even so the Son quickens whom he will.

<sup>22</sup>For the Father judges no man, but has committed all judgment to the Son: <sup>23</sup>That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honours

not the Son honours not the Father which has sent him. <sup>24</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, He that hears my word and believes on him that sent me, has everlasting life and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death to life. <sup>25</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, The hour is coming and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup>Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.

The Son is The Groom and He gives these people Everlasting Life. Notice how many times *The Son* is mentioned in regards to *judgment, honor and listening*. You should *believe Christ* because He is *your Husband* and He *sanctifies you*. He will make you *righteous* and then you will become The Bride (representing *the church*). You are going to be *saved*. Christ said, “<sup>25</sup>*the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live* [this is the first resurrection] <sup>26</sup>*For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself.*”

Jesus is The Groom. The Son and The Father are *one*. If The Bride and Groom become *one*, then all is *One* with God. When The Groom loves you and you love The Groom then *The Marriage takes place*. “<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice.*”

## Second Resurrection

Only those called during *The First Resurrection* will become The Bride of Christ. They heard His voice. The Guests will be called to The Wedding Feast later (this is The Second Resurrection). The Father is having a marriage for His Son and The Bride. *The Others* are The Guests. But who are they? “<sup>29</sup>*And shall come forth; they that have done good to the resurrection of life.*” When the servants were sent to invite The Guests, they went into the highways. The bad and the good (the wheat and the tares) were called together. This is The Marriage Feast, The Time of Judgment. The judgment is not a time of horror, rather it is *A Time of Release*. It is a time of joy, “<sup>29</sup>*And shall come forth; they that have done good. To the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.*” The word “*damnation*” is a poor English translation. The literal meaning is “*a time of sentencing.*” In Greek, the word “*krisis*” is “*crisis.*” How many people come to The Wedding of The Bride and The Groom?

Matthew 22:14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

*Most people* will be going into The Lake of Fire. When a person does not have the proper garment, that person is thrown out (weeping and gnashing of teeth). What does Christ say, “<sup>14</sup>*For many are called [to the wedding], but few are chosen.*” That is quite clear.

**100,000,000 People**

The number of individuals brought before The Throne of

Judgment is referenced in Daniel 7:10. It is 10,000 times 10,000 or *one hundred million people*. These are *the chosen few*. Daniel may be correct or perhaps he was merely giving an example. What this implies is that out of the billions of people who lived on earth, there will be only about one hundred million people who will experience *the resurrection of the just*, “<sup>14</sup>*For many are called, but few are chosen.*”

Everyone who will be in New Jerusalem is written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*. If you are not written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, then you will burn. Only those written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, The Groom, The Bride and The Guests are part of The Marriage. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is about marriage. *The Book of Life* is a Marriage Registry. Christ said, “*Because strait is the gate and narrow is the way, which leads to life and few there be that find it*” (Matthew 7:14). He is talking about the gate that opens into New Jerusalem.

New Jerusalem has Twelve Gates and *the path* to get there is narrow and difficult. *Character* and *righteousness* is required to pass through. Very few people will have the character needed to go through this gate. Those left out are the dogs, liars and whoremongers who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. In *The Gospels*, Jesus consistently talks about children. When the little children came to Him, The Disciples tried to keep them away. Christ said, “*No, permit little children to come to me. Of such is The Kingdom of God.*” Unless you are like *a little child*, you shall not enter into *The Kingdom*. Christ will not marry just any woman. He will not allow any guests to be at His Wedding if they do not have humility (*agàpè love*).



***Humble* people can be taught *like children*. They are *open-minded*. They don't get into *arguments*. They are *looking for truth* and discern *the right* way to live. If you can spend a good portion of your time giving (self-sacrifice for others), then you don't have time to think about yourself. If you are productive and help the poor and the sick, then you will not have *idle time* to think about yourself.**

**If all you do is think about yourself, you *probably* won't get into God's kingdom (without first seeking God).**

Song of Solomon 1:1-7 <sup>1</sup>The song of songs, which is Solomon's. <sup>2</sup>Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth: for your love is better than wine. <sup>3</sup>Because of the savour of your good ointments your name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love you. <sup>4</sup>Draw me, we will run after you: the king has brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in you, we will remember your love more than wine: the upright love you. <sup>5</sup>I am black, but comely, O you daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon. <sup>6</sup>Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun has looked upon me: my mother's children were angry with me; they made me the keeper of the vineyards; but mine own vineyard have I not kept. <sup>7</sup>Tell me, O you whom my soul loves, where you feed, where you make your flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turns aside by the flocks of your companions?

## Cinderella

*The Song of Solomon* could be portrayed as Cinderella

with her lost slipper. *The Book of Revelation* could be compared to Snow White. Snow White is looking for her Prince riding on a white horse. She awaits his coming to wake her up. Don't forget, *the seven dwarfs* (seven candlesticks) took care of Snow White until The Prince arrived. The dwarfs represent The Seven Churches in *Revelation*. *The Bible* is the greatest and the most wonderful love story that ever existed. *The Song of Solomon* illustrates the path to take.

How did Snow White wake up? “<sup>2</sup>*Let him kiss me with the kisses of his mouth.*” Snow White had to wait for the Prince to come and kiss her. “*For your love is better than wine.*” <sup>3</sup>*Because of the savour of your good ointments your name is as ointment poured forth, therefore do the virgins love you.*” Cinderella had stepsisters (the other virgins) who were, also, interested in the prince. “<sup>4</sup>*Draw me, we will run after you* [this is about the virgins, not The Bride. Then] *The king has brought me into his chambers: we will be glad and rejoice in you, we will remember your love more than wine: the upright love you.*”

In Cinderella's story, she is *the cinder-maid* who didn't have decent clothes. She was required to do all the work for everyone else, “<sup>5</sup>*I am black, but comely.*” “Comely” in English means “good looking.” She is *black* from working in the fields and from the rays of the sun, “*O you daughters of Jerusalem, as the tents of Kedar, as the curtains of Solomon.* [These were black]. “*Look not upon me.*” In other words, don't look upon me, Prince. The Prince was going to The Ball. The stepsisters and the other virgins in the town were primping up. They were setting their hair and getting their faces made up. They were dressing in

beautiful clothing. But Cinderella was saying, “*Look not upon me, because I am black, because the sun has looked upon me: my mother’s children [stepsisters] were angry with me [as with Cinderella] they made me the keeper of the vineyards [in other words, they made her do all the work] but mine own vineyard have I not kept.*” She was not able to take care of herself. Can you see Cinderella in this story? “*Tell me, O you whom my soul loves, where you feedest [where is The Prince?] Where you make your flock to rest at noon: for why should I be as one that turns aside by the flocks of your companions?*” Why should she be shunned away?

The similarity of the story of Cinderella to *the original biblical text* is amazing. Going on with the story, the fairy godmother gave her a beautiful outfit. She was dressed in *righteousness*. She had a beautiful carriage but at twelve o’clock the carriage would turn into a pumpkin and her clothes would turn into rags. Christ warns both the virgins who are wise and the ones who are foolish (Matthew 25). Cinderella runs into the carriage and sprints home as it turns into a pumpkin. She barely makes it in time. How can The Prince tell if she is *the church*? It is the slipper. Whose slipper is this? Now you can tie this together with *The Law of Inheritance*.

## Law Of Inheritance

Ruth 4:1-7 <sup>1</sup>Then went Boaz up the gate and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spake came by; to whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down here. And he turned aside and sat down.  
<sup>2</sup>And he took ten men of the elders of the city and said,

Sit you down here. And they sat down. <sup>3</sup>And he said to the kinsman, Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, sells a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech's: <sup>4</sup>And I thought to advertise you, saying, Buy it before the inhabitants and before the elders of my people. If you will redeem it, redeem it: but if you will not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside you; and I am after you. And he said, I will redeem it. <sup>5</sup>Then said Boaz, What day you buy the field of the hand of Naomi, you must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead upon his inheritance. <sup>6</sup>And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem you my right to yourself; for I cannot redeem it. <sup>7</sup>Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe, and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony in Israel.

*The Bible contains the entire marriage saga. You will be surprised by what The Wedding is all about and how it takes place at the end. Elimelech was an Israelite who lived in The Land of Israel (Ruth 4:1). There was a famine in the land, so Elimelech took his wife, Naomi, his two sons and they left Israel for Moab. Moab was a Gentile area filled with pagan religions. Who does Elimelech and Naomi's sons marry? They marry Gentile women.*

Elimelech dies and, eventually, the sons die. One of the Gentile wives went back to her father's home while Ruth, although a Gentile, stayed with Naomi.

Compare this with the time when Christ came and was sent to Israel. The nation rejected Him so He went to The Gentiles. Ruth was used by God because she was a Gentile. That which was first *is last* and that which was last *is first*. Israel should have been first but ended up being last. Instead, The Gentiles came in first, as The Bride. This is the story of how Ruth had to become The Bride. It is a parallel to Christ and His Bride. Ruth is tied into *The Law of Inheritance* through Israel and her future husband. As time goes by, Naomi decides to leave Moab and go back to her own nation. Ruth, her daughter-in-law, who has endeared herself to Naomi as a daughter, decides to go with Naomi (while the other daughter-in-law went back to her father's family).

### Reaching Israel's Land

When they reach The Land of Israel, Naomi tells Ruth to work in Boaz's vineyard, since he was a kinsman. This is an important point. You will understand the reason why Christ had to be your Savior. Boaz agreed with Ruth and went ahead to *redeem her*. Now, know this. Boaz had to *redeem her*. He was able to redeem her through *the inheritance* because he was a kinsman to Naomi. *The Law* states that this *had* to happen. This is another piece of the puzzle.

Boaz, as the leading kinsman, redeemed her. This coincides with The Prince and Cinderella's slipper. “<sup>1</sup>*Then went Boaz up to the gate and sat him down there: and, behold, the kinsman of whom Boaz spoke came by.*” There was one kinsman who was ahead of Boaz. A relative through Elimelech's lineage was a closer relative. Therefore, “*to*

*whom he said, Ho, such a one! Turn aside, sit down here. And he turned aside and sat down. <sup>2</sup>And he took ten men of the elders of the city and said, Sit you down here. And they sat down. <sup>3</sup>And he said to the kinsman.” This kinsman had first choice to Naomi and Ruth’s inheritance, “Naomi, that is come again out of the country of Moab, sold a parcel of land, which was our brother Elimelech’s [this concerns *The Law of Inheritance*] <sup>4</sup>And I thought to advertise [advise] you [this is the way they contractually made everyone understand that they were coming to an agreement, signing a contract] saying, Buy it before the inhabitants.”*

### A Woman Was Property

What kind of marriage does *The Law* promote at this time? The woman is considered property along with the land. As property, the purchaser must buy her, “*and before the elders of my people. If you will redeem it, redeem it.*” Then, Boaz asked the kinsman, “*If you want to buy her, you can because you have first choice to redeem Ruth [then he adds] but if you will not redeem it, then tell me, that I may know: for there is none to redeem it beside you: and I am after you.*” He is saying, “*If you don’t buy her, then I have the right to buy her.*” Remember she is property at this point. That is what Ruth 4 tells you, “*And he [a kinsman] said, I will redeem it. <sup>5</sup>Then said Boaz, What day you buy the field of the hand of Naomi, you must buy it also of Ruth the Moabitess, the wife of the dead.*” Here, the contract is spelled out. It is not merely a contract between people for people but, also, for the land. By buying the land that belonged to Elimelech, Boaz also buys Naomi and Ruth (with Ruth, as his wife). Notice, “*the wife of the dead, to raise up the name of the dead* [so, *The Inheritance*

could continue] *upon his inheritance.* *‘And the kinsman said, I cannot redeem it for myself, lest I mar mine own inheritance: redeem you my right to yourself.’* What this means is that Boaz could buy her because the kinsman could not do so, *“For I cannot redeem it. <sup>7</sup>Now this was the manner in former time in Israel concerning redeeming and concerning changing, for to confirm all things: a man plucked off his shoe.”*

### Cinderella’s Slipper

This brings you to a very interesting point about Cinderella’s slipper. *Cinderella’s shoe was all that was righteous.* The shoe is her *agreement* to marry The Prince, just like Boaz and Ruth. Notice the words, *“his shoe and gave it to his neighbour: and this was a testimony [contract] in Israel.”* In The Cinderella Story, The Prince tries to find the woman whose foot will fit the slipper. Why is the slipper at the gate? It is because the only way to get into The Kingdom of God is through The Gate.

Each gate in *The New Heaven* and *The New Earth* represents A Tribe of Israel. You cannot come into The Kingdom of God except through Israel. Unless you become *a spiritual Israelite*, you cannot be The Bride of Christ. At the time of restitution, Israel, who will have rejected Christ during The Millennium, will then have their chance to become *spiritual Israelites*. They will be required to *keep The Whole Law*, which they did not do before, so they will learn to follow Christ.

All the pieces of the puzzle fit together. New Jerusalem has Twelve Gates and each gate represents A Tribe of Is-

rael. It is the only way you can get into *The Kingdom*. The Bride is present because she is part of The Salvation Walls along with The Apostles. Why did Boaz have to sit at The Gate? He sat there because it was the only way to carry out *The Law of Inheritance*. The Elders at The Gate bound *the agreement* there. The only way you can get through The Gates in The Kingdom of God is to become *a spiritual Israelite* (Romans 2). It fits into the puzzle and makes sense. It is, truly, a great love story.

### **Outline Of The Royal Marriage**

**Why did Christ have to redeem (pay the price for) all of you? Hebrews 4 is the outline for entering into God's *rest*, The Sabbath's *rest* or New Jerusalem.**

Isaiah 58:1-10 <sup>1</sup>Cry aloud, spare not, lift up your voice like a trumpet and show my people their transgression and the house of Jacob their sins. <sup>2</sup>Yet they seek me daily and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. <sup>3</sup>Wherefore have we fasted, say they and you see not? Wherefore have we afflicted our soul and you take no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast you find pleasure and exact all your labours. <sup>4</sup>Behold, you fast for strife and debate and to smite with the fist of wickedness: you shall not fast as you do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. <sup>5</sup>Is it such a fast that I have chosen? A day for a man to afflict his soul? Is it to bow down his head as a bulrush and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? Will you call



this a fast and an acceptable day to the LORD? <sup>6</sup>Is not this the fast that I have chosen? To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free and that you break every yoke? <sup>7</sup>Is it not to deal your bread to the hungry and that you bring the poor that are cast out to your house? When you see the naked, that you cover him; and that you hide not yourself from your own flesh? <sup>8</sup>Then shall your light break forth as the morning and your health shall spring forth speedily: and your righteousness shall go before you: the glory of the LORD shall be your reward. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you call and the LORD shall answer; you shall cry and he shall say, Here I am. If you take away from the midst of you the yoke, the putting forth of the finger and speaking vanity; <sup>10</sup>And if you draw out your soul to the hungry and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall your light rise in obscurity and your darkness be as the noon day.

To fully understand the topic of marriage, you must learn how to *become righteous*. Then, you learn to *qualify* to be The Bride. You, also, learn how the marriage takes place. These people are seeking God (Isaiah 58:1-2). In Hebrew, they are called “*The Hassidim*” or “*The Righteous Ones*.” They are *chosen* and, rightfully, called *saints*. “<sup>3</sup>*Wherefore have we fasted, say they.*” Remember the parable that Christ gave about The Pharisee and *the poor man*. The Pharisee said, “*I fast twice a week and I tithed.*” Does this sound familiar to the way some people speak today? They fast and pay tithes of all they have. The poor man comes in, he has not fasted or tithed and says, “*I am a sinner.*” Hence, Christ said he (the poor man) would be in The Kingdom of God. The person who admits that he is

a sinner (feels not worthy) will be in The Kingdom of God. *“And you see not? Wherefore have we afflicted our soul.”* Why do you fast? What is your motive? This instruction is about Atonement and The Jubilee.

But God says, *“Behold, in the day of your fast [Day of Atonement] you find pleasure and exact all your labours.* [These people are still seeking everything for themselves]. *<sup>4</sup>Behold, you fast for strife and debate and to smite with the fist of wickedness [all this is hypocrisy. The warning is] you shall not fast as you do this day [Atonement], to make your voice to be heard on high.”* God did not want people to make a show of piety through the physical work of *The Law*. God says, *“Is not this the fast that I have chosen to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free?”* That is *the type of fast* that leads to freedom.

## Christ's Bride

The Bride of Christ must be *humble* and very giving. That is *true Christianity*. *The Jubilee Year is The Marriage Feast*. The Bride is *the first fruit* and is *redeemed before the time of release or Jubilee*. She is *redeemed* in a shorter period of time, which culminates at The Pentecost when she gets her *inheritance* (God's Holy Spirit). This is *“to undo the heavy burdens and to let the oppressed go free and that you break every yoke.”* During The Jubilee, all debt and sin is forgiven. *“<sup>7</sup>Is it not to deal your bread to the hungry and that you bring the poor that are cast out to your house? When you see the naked, that you cover him; and that you hide not yourself from your own flesh?* [This instruction is all about marriage and family]. *<sup>8</sup>Then shall*

*your light break forth as the morning and your health shall spring forth speedily: and your righteousness shall go before you: the glory of the LORD shall be your reward. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you call and the LORD shall answer”* (this is when God will be with you in The Kingdom). Notice it says, “*you shall cry and he shall say, Here I am.*” This is a theme that appears to be right out of *The Book of Revelation*.

### Sabbath Of Rest

How does a person keep The Sabbath? God wants you to do *good works* on *The Sabbath* and call it a *delight* (Isaiah 58:13). A person does not do his or her own pleasure on this day. They do *good works*. God and Jesus worked on The Sabbath by doing *good works* (John 5:17). *The true Sabbath* concerns *the rest*. The Marriage, The New Jerusalem and you are to delight in *that promise*. The first Sabbath in *Genesis* was very good (Genesis 2:3).

Isaiah 58:14 Then shall you delight yourself in the LORD; and I will cause you to ride upon the high places of the earth and feed you with the heritage of Jacob your father: for the mouth of the LORD has spoken it.

*The inheritance* came from Abraham through Jacob. *The righteous* enter The Gates of New Jerusalem. *The covenant* comes through Israel and Abraham. In *Galatians*, you learn that, “*New Jerusalem is the mother of us all*” (Galatians 4:26). Perhaps now, you will be able to read *The Bible* with greater understanding because the main pieces of the puzzle are assembled together.

Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD’s hand is not

shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

**God can and will *save everyone*. Atheists say, “*Why doesn't God show Himself?*” God can't show Himself around *sin*. No man, except The Son, has seen The Father. *Sin* is corruption and God cannot be around *sin*. At The Marriage, if you don't have the right garments (without sin), then you will burn.**

Isaiah 59:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And the Redeemer shall come to Zion and to them that turn from transgression in Jacob, said the LORD. <sup>21</sup>As for me, this is my covenant with them, said the LORD; My spirit that is upon you and my words which I have put in your mouth, shall not depart out of your mouth, nor out of the mouth of your seed, nor out of the mouth of your seed's seed, said the LORD, from henceforth and for ever.

## Christ To Jerusalem

**Do you remember how Ruth was redeemed? Christ, The Redeemer, is coming to Jerusalem. *This is His return*. God will be with *everyone* forever. He says, “<sup>21</sup>*Your people also shall be all righteous, they shall inherit the land for ever; the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified*” (Isaiah 60:21).**

Isaiah 62:4 You shall no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzi-bah and your land

**Beulah: for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.**

Now, to an important promise, “*4You shall no more be termed Forsaken* [God forsook Israel. Then, in talking about Zion] *neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate.*” Through *The Law of Inheritance*, Boaz bought the land first; then, he *bought his bride*. From Boaz through Ruth (a Gentile) came Jesse, from whom came David, from whom came Jesus. So you see, the line comes through *the church and The Gentiles*. (Israel was the first but did not accept Christ, The Groom). So, God called **The Gentiles and they will be first, ahead of Israel, to become The Son’s Bride**. That is why Ruth had to be a Gentile and marry into the line of Abraham.

Ruth became *a spiritual Israelite* – or **The Body of Christ**. The result is that, “*4neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzi-bah* [“Hephzi-bah” in Hebrew means “*delight*”] *and your land Beulah* [the word “*Beulah*” in Hebrew means “*married*”] *for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.*” So, **The Marriage includes The Land and The Bride**. When Boaz redeemed Elimelech’s land, he bought the land as a possession, along with Ruth and Naomi. Therefore, *all was redeemed*. That is why Christ was required to die and *redeem you from Satan*. Only, then, can you receive God’s *inheritance*. Who is *clothed with righteousness* (a Hagios) (Isaiah 58:6-14 and Ephesians 1:1)?

## **Correct Wedding Garments**

**What does it take to be clothed in *the right marriage gar-***

*ment?* Who has the right shoe? Like Cinderella, Boaz gave his shoe to fit *righteous* Ruth. Ruth accepted *the true* God and His *inheritance*. This is a lesson in *humility* and giving to *the poor*. It is releasing the ox from the heavy burden. Clearly, The Sabbath's Rest is doing *good works*. Now, you can see where more of the pieces fit together in the puzzle. What do you think is *the Holiest time* of all? If you were going to pick a holy time, which would you pick? Would it be The Sabbath or The Holy Days? Read on. It gets better!

Leviticus 25:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And the LORD spoke to Moses, in mount Sinai, saying, <sup>2</sup>Speak to the children of Israel and say to them, When you come into the land which I give you, then shall the land keep a sabbath to the LORD. <sup>3</sup>Six years you shall sow your field and six years you shall prune your vineyard and gather in the fruit thereof; <sup>4</sup>But in the seventh year shall be a sabbath of rest to the land, a sabbath for the LORD: you shall neither sow your field, nor prune your vineyard. <sup>5</sup>That which grows of its own accord of your harvest you shall not reap, neither gather the grapes of your vine undressed: for it is a year of rest to the land. <sup>6</sup>And the sabbath of the land shall be meat for you; for you and for your servant and for your maid and for your hired servant and for your stranger that so journeys with you.

**The Marriage of The Land and The People** (the reason Christ had to *redeem* you) is *revealed* in Leviticus 25. *The Whole Law is the shadow of things to come* (Hebrews 10:1). Let *The Law* lead you to Christ, The Groom and Husband. When *The Law* leads you to Christ, then you are fulfilling

*The Law* and have *agapè love*, which completes *The Law*. This all takes place when Christ *returns*. It is *The Time of Restitution*. He comes to Israel for The Restoration of all things. The first item to be *restored* is The Land Sabbath during The Seventh Year. Perhaps Jesus will *return* in The Seventh Calendar Year (The Land Sabbath).

The strangers, The Gentiles and all who come into the land are at rest with the land. The land, at that time, is going to produce so much that no one can eat it all and the sea will have a great abundance of fish. Now, to the holiest time of all for everyone. This is The Marriage Feast, the time of rejoicing! Certain people were left out of *The Book of Life of The Lamb* because they did not qualify. Only those who are called as The Bride or Guests are in *The Lamb's Book*. Everyone else is *released* from their other sins at a later time.

Leviticus 25:8-20 <sup>8</sup>And you shall number seven sabbaths of years to you, seven times seven years; and the space of the seven sabbaths of years shall be to you forty and nine years. <sup>9</sup>Then shall you cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound on the tenth day of the seventh month, in the day of atonement [one with God] shall you make the trumpet sound throughout all your land. <sup>10</sup>And you shall hallow the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty throughout all the land to all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee to you; and you shall return every man to his possession and you shall return every man to his family. <sup>11</sup>A jubilee shall that fiftieth year be to you: you shall not sow, neither reap that which grows of itself in it, nor gather the grapes in it of your vine undressed. <sup>12</sup>For it is

the jubilee; it shall be holy to you: you shall eat the increase thereof out of the field. <sup>13</sup>In the year of this jubilee you shall return every man to his possession. <sup>14</sup>And if you sell ought to your neighbour, or buy ought of your neighbour's hand, you shall not oppress one another: <sup>15</sup>According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbour and according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you: <sup>16</sup>According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it: for according to the number of the years of the fruits does he sell to you. <sup>17</sup>You shall not therefore oppress one another; but you shall fear your God: for I am the LORD your God. <sup>18</sup>Wherefore you shall do my statutes and keep my judgments and do them: and you shall dwell in the land in safety. <sup>19</sup>And the land shall yield her fruit and you shall eat your fill and dwell therein in safety. <sup>20</sup>And if you shall say, What shall we eat the seventh year? Behold, we shall not sow, nor gather in our increase.

*The Spring Harvest* lasts for 50 days. It is a short period of time for *The Bride* to be redeemed before The 50<sup>th</sup> Year, “<sup>9</sup>Then shall you cause the trumpet of the jubilee to sound.” The word “*Jubilee*” means “*feast*” or “*marriage supper.*” This is *the horn of plenty* at harvest time. It is the time of The Jubilee. It is a time of great abundance because God pours out all of His love and gives everything He has to you as your *inheritance*.

You had better *understand* this wonderful God that you worship! Do you think that God could destroy any of His



children? God disciplines every child and He destroys none (Hebrews 12). So The Jubilee text continues with, “*Then shall you cause the trumpet of jubilee to sound [when?] on the tenth day of the seventh month.*” This is The Jubilee. It is The Marriage Feast which begins on The Day of Atonement. What type of fast does God want? He does not want you looking maudlin and pale. He doesn’t want you in ragged clothing. He wants you to be set free. He wants you to give to the poor and help individuals who are in need. After the resurrection, He wants to *release* everybody’s *debt* or *sin*.

### Proclaim Liberty

This is true love. Beautiful, isn’t it? You are to be *One* with God. How long does this Holy Day last? He says, “<sup>10</sup>*And you shall hallow the fiftieth year and proclaim liberty throughout all the land to all the inhabitants thereof: it shall be a jubilee to you; and you shall return every man to his possession.*” God gave an inheritance to Israel; but, as you found in *The Book of The Law*, God also gave an inheritance to The Gentiles. This is the time when there is *no more debt to pay*, “<sup>10</sup>*return every man to his possession.*” It doesn’t require *redeeming*. Do you get the point? There is no price to pay. No Savior is needed – only a *Judge*. These people are not required to be in *The Book of Life* because only those in *The Book of Life* are to be *redeemed* before the time, “<sup>10</sup>*and you shall return every man to his possession and you shall return every man to his family.*”

### Feast Of Marriage

Have you ever wondered why *the church* named their

feasts after *love feasts* (*agàpè* feasts)? It is because of *The Feast of Marriage*. “<sup>12</sup>*For it is the jubilee; it shall be holy to you: you shall eat the increased thereof out of the field.* <sup>13</sup>*In the year of this jubilee you shall return every man to his possession.* <sup>14</sup>*And if you sell ought to your neighbour, or buy ought of your neighbour's hand, you shall not oppress one another.”* This certainly sounds like Isaiah 58. If you want to buy a person's land and it is The 25<sup>th</sup> Year with 25 more years until The Jubilee Year, then you can only retain it for the remaining 25 years. This is why Christ had to come and pay a price.

If you want the land back before the 25 years end, you must redeem it. That is why *Baal marriage* makes a woman a possession, just as the land was a possession. Christ has to come to *redeem* you before The Jubilee. Do you understand the impact of all this? Christians are *saved* in The First Resurrection as Christ's Bride. This is *the great mystery* of The Church and Christ. In Leviticus 25, “<sup>16</sup>*According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it.”* The parable of the penny relates to this. He said that in The 9<sup>th</sup> Hour, He would pay the workers *a penny*. Then in The 11<sup>th</sup> Hour, He said He would pay them *a penny*. It was His to give and He determined the price. *He is The Redeemer.*

Leviticus 25:15-18 <sup>15</sup>According to the number of years after the jubilee you shall buy of your neighbour and according to the number of years of the fruits he shall sell to you: <sup>16</sup>According to the multitude of years you shall increase the price thereof and according to the fewness of years you shall diminish the price of it: for

according to the number of the years of the fruits does he sell to you. <sup>17</sup>You shall not therefore oppress one another; but you shall fear your God: for I *am* the LORD your God. <sup>18</sup>Wherefore you shall do my statutes and keep my judgments and do them; and you shall dwell in the land in safety.

**This is talking about The Time of The Restoration.**

Leviticus 25:23-27 <sup>23</sup>The land shall not be sold for ever: for the land is mine; for you are strangers and sojourners with me. <sup>24</sup>And in all the land of your possession you shall grant a redemption for the land. <sup>25</sup>If your brother be waxen poor and has sold away some of his possession and if any of his kin come to redeem it, then shall he redeem that which his brother sold. <sup>26</sup>And if the man have none to redeem it and himself be able to redeem it; <sup>27</sup>Then let him count the years of the sale thereof and restore the overplus to the man to whom he sold it; that he may return to his possession.

To explain The Redemption, “<sup>23</sup>*The land shall not be sold for ever.* [Therefore, the death penalty on humanity cannot be forever]. *For the land is mine; for you are strangers and sojourners with me.* <sup>24</sup>*And in all the land of your possession you shall grant a redemption for the land.*” You are able to redeem it. That is why Boaz was able to redeem the land. Now carefully analyze the text of Leviticus 25. The message is that Christ had to come as The Savior to pay the price for your *redemption* through His death. This is before The Jubilee. That is why Pentecost (The Spring Harvest) is the early harvest. The Fall Harvest of The

Great Jubilee of The Last Great Day is when you have a Redeemer. If you have no Redeemer, then you can not be released from your debt or *The Marriage of The Land and People*, until The Jubilee. The Jubilee is The Fiftieth Year when everyone else is *released* (but not all are redeemed). To be "*redeemed*," Christ literally had to come and pay a price for you and buy you before The Jubilee. That is the reason you are in *The Lamb's Book of Life* and you go to The Marriage along with The Guests. *Marriage* truly explains the meaning of God's *word*. Isaiah 58 through Isaiah 66 fills in all the pieces of the time period. Then, study Leviticus 25 about The Redemption and The Jubilee.

## Two Vital Roles

Christ has two roles. First, He is *The Redeemer* (before The Jubilee for The Bride and Guests) and secondly, He is *The Judge* to *release* everyone else after the sentence (The Jubilee). Many worldly churches just observe the bread and the wine (Communion) without The Jubilee because they do not know that God is *saving everyone*. With this major piece of the puzzle solved, you now have the complete picture. Christ came as The Redeemer *before* The Year of Jubilee. He can buy you and *redeem* you before The Jubilee. He will restore everything to the original Marriage with The Bride and The Guests, but *no one else*. When The Bride and Groom are married and The Marriage Jubilee (wedding feast) takes place, then where are the children? When do The Bride and Groom have children? Where do they come from? Read about God's *thoughts* for His Creation which are so wonderfully explained (Psalm 40). He talks about Christ and how Christ had to qualify. He had to *redeem you* and, then, He will give you everything

**He has. It is more than overwhelming! Read about God's beautiful *purposes for His creation.***

**Revelation 19:1** And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven, saying, Alleluia; Salvation and glory and honour and power to the Lord our God.

**Revelation 19:7** Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.

**The fall of Babylon and the great whore is explained in Chapter 18. She is called a whore and doesn't think she will ever be a widow. The fall of Babylon and this great false woman is followed by instruction regarding The True Woman of Christ in Revelation 19. So, Isaiah 58 ties in with this by showing how to make yourself ready (by getting *dressed in righteousness*).**

## **Armies Of God**

**Revelation 19:14-16** <sup>14</sup>And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. <sup>15</sup>And out of his mouth goes a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treads the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. <sup>16</sup>And he has on his vesture and on his thigh, a name written, KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.

**Christ (The Prince) is now ready to *resurrect His Bride***

(*the church*) (just like Snow White). The fine linen that is white and clean is the clothing of *righteousness*. He is “**KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS.**” The Prince will come on His white horse with His armies to receive *the church* (Snow White). This coincides with the child's story *The Wizard of Oz*. What did Dorothy need to do? She had to find *the right path* to go back home. Jesus said, “*I am the Alpha and the Omega. I am the beginning and the end.*” Dorothy (Eve) was hopelessly lost.

Just as Eve lost God, she also lost her husband (or the way he should have been). When you read *The Song Of Solomon* you realize that she *lost Eternal Life*. That is why she was trying to find her way back. When she winds through all the mazes, she sees New Jerusalem off in the distance. What does it look like? It is like *an emerald rainbow*. Do you remember the song “*Over The Rainbow?*” That is the story of *The Wizard Of Oz*. Remember, Dorothy had shoes that were special, just like Cinderella's slippers. Writers often borrow concepts from *The Bible* when writing children's fairy tales.

Revelation 21:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor

crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

## The Final Scene

*New Jerusalem is the wedding site. It is The Marriage of The Land and The People. God will establish His abode with the people. There will be no more pain, sorrow or suffering of any kind. This is The True Sabbath Rest. All the former things have passed away and it will be like The Garden of Eden. It is Paradise (The Beginning and The End). This includes The Guests at The Wedding and all the others. They will receive The Fountain of The Water of Life freely.*

These are all those who are written in *The Book of The Life of The Lamb*. *The Book of The Life of The Lamb* includes The Marriage and The Marriage Feast. If you are not invited to the marriage or marriage feast, you will get burned, *but only to the point of your repentance*. God will give you every opportunity. He will wait until you are ready. It is very plain and very simple.

## Chapter 9

### THE COVENANTS

God has had *a plan* of reproducing Himself from the very beginning of time. In fact, *The Bible* was created as a puzzle. Everyone has a chance to be called, but only at his/her own appointed time. When Christ returns to earth, He will put down all the enemies of God. This includes Satan who will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Then, Christ will turn everything over to God, The Father.

**This theme of complete victory by Christ is a powerful one. In due course, His *rule* will be followed by the consummate act of turning everything over to God, The Father.**

I Corinthians 15:28 And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

**There are *five different covenants or agreements* that God made in order to bring His *purpose to fruition*.**

#### Five Covenants

In order to create a universe with *a family and sons*, God arranged His *plan* to have *five separate agreements*. Four of those will eventually produce The Kingdom of God (Sons of God). The fifth and final agreement is when God estab-



lishes His *Kingdom* and makes everything new. Each time God makes an *agreement* or *covenant*, it is for a *different specific purpose*. Furthermore, each covenant is based on *different requirements*. Many worldly *churches* get confused with the various *covenants* so Christians argue and debate *the covenants*. Since *these agreements* have *different purposes*, it is important for you to understand *the differences* between each *agreement* or *covenant*.

All of God's *covenants* will finally result in all mankind becoming Sons of God. God made these *agreements* with either *one person*, *a group of people* or with *the whole world*. *These agreements* were made with Adam and Eve, with one nation (Israel) and, finally, with all nations.

It can be confusing when a person does not understand the end result for *each covenant*. For those who earnestly want to understand, God makes it eminently clear and keeps it very simple. However, this depends upon the reader following *each scripture* step-by-step. God used one of His powers (name or title) in reference to a *particular agreement*. You must know the titles or names that God uses. God uses six of them in *The Old Testament* and one in *The New Testament*. Even God's name or title causes Christians to argue. Each title or name denotes what God is doing in a particular situation.

### Accurate Identity Through Names

God names things for what they are. He uses a specific name when preparing a new contract. He is revealing His *purpose* for any particular contract at any given time. When He uses "*Elohim*," it is a plural word meaning

**“many.”** God is reproducing Himself. Many Christians believe in *a trinity* while others believe in the notion of just *two gods*. But, there is only *one God*. Few understand that He uses one of His names when depicting what He wants to accomplish *at a particular time*. When God came to deal with Israel as a nation, He became **“YHWH”** (JHVH). He was never known by that name to any of the fathers (Abraham, Isaac or Jacob). YHWH (JHVH) is the **“I AM THAT I AM.”** So YHWH (JHVH) was the name He used specifically for Israel.

Abraham not only had *Elohim* but also *El Shaddai*. *Elohim* is the plural or *universal* God who is *all encompassing* (God’s purpose is to be *all and in all*). When God uses the name **“Elohim,”** He is talking about being in everything or dealing on *a universal basis*. When talking to Abraham, God was *Elohim* and *El Shaddai*, *The Mighty Pourer-Forth* or *nurturer*. **“El Shaddai”** means **“mighty,”** **“nurturing”** and **“prospering.”** When He talked to Abraham, He was *Elohim*, *a Nurturer* and *The Mighty Giver for the whole universe*. He was *the one* who made everyone prosper.

In Hebrew, the word **“JHVH”** means **“merciful,”** **“just,”** **“good,”** **“righteous”** and **“a judgmental God.”** This is the name He used when dealing with Israel. God *wanted Israel to repent*, but Israel was stubborn and unrepentant. That was *the purpose of His covenant* with them. *The covenant*, which included *The Law*, was designed to bring them to Christ. *The Law* was to bring Israel to repentance. Many Christians think God is very stern. In a way, He is very demanding – *an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth*. Through His different names, God *will reveal what He is doing in each covenant or agreement*.

## Why God Is A Father

When you get to *The New Testament*, you find God with, yet, another name, *Our Father*. This is a *personal* Father with a *one-on-one* relationship through His Son, Jesus Christ. So, your Father created a *family relationship*. God became a Father who gives, teaches, instructs, forgives and loves. He has drawn up “*a will*” so you can receive an *inheritance*. These *agreements* appropriately fit the name they were given by God, who uses it to tie in with a *particular covenant*. That key will help you understand when you study *The Bible*.

Hebrews 4:2-3 <sup>2</sup>For to us was the gospel preached, as well as to them: but the word preached did not profit them, not being mixed with faith in them that heard it. <sup>3</sup>For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

*God's Sabbath rest was Paradise in The Garden of Eden* and it was *very good*. Everything was perfect. God gave instructions to Adam and Eve, making an *agreement* with them. A *covenant* was created in Eden. Since there was no *Law*, the requirement was *faith* or *belief* under *this first covenant*. At first, Adam and Eve didn't realize they were naked. They learned this after their first sin. Consider the situation posed later, “*As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest* [referring back to the beginning] *although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.*” This is when everything was complete in The Garden of Eden. In *The Book of Revelation*, God

tells you that He is The Alpha and The Omega. He tells you that *the beginning* and *the end* are *one and the same*. *The end picks up from the beginning and completes God's Plan*. Christ came "to save [restore] *what was lost*" (Matthew 18:11). Both are concerned with *entering God's rest*.

## The Word Of God

Christ became The Word of God. Jesus Christ said He did what The Father told Him to do. That statement alone ought to explain that there is only *one* God. The Word (before Christ became human) didn't exist as another *being* because *that Word* became Christ. Christ spoke and acted like The Father. Christ *became The Word of God* or *The Living Word of God* (John 1:14). In *The Book of Revelation*, He is referred to as The Alpha and The Omega, as well as being The Word of God. From the beginning, He was God's *word* (God's *thoughts* and God's *mind*).

Because Adam and Eve did not have *faith*, they did not enter into God's *rest* (Sabbath) nor could they remain in The Garden of Eden. They had to be cut off from The Tree of Life. Paradise was lost and, as a result, Christ had to come restore this idyllic state for Adam, Eve and all of God's Creation. He had to come so you, too, can have Eternal Life.

For thousands of years, people have wondered why God didn't make humans perfect from the beginning and give them everything wonderful in His *kingdom*. He tried. God gave Adam and Eve that chance, but He had to give them *free choice*. *This free choice* is a trait that God has, so He wants all His *children* to have it too.

When God gave them *the right* to choose, He made an agreement saying, “*Here is The Tree of Life and here is The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. You must decide what is right and wrong.*” That was *the first agreement* between God and man. Adam was a type or a figure of Jesus Christ (Romans 5:14). Eve, whose name means “*the mother of all living,*” was the type of the mother for everyone or New Jerusalem. So, Adam and Eve, as a type, could have been Christ and *the church*. Notice that they, also, had been joined according to God’s *marriage*.

Genesis 1:27-28 <sup>27</sup>So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. <sup>28</sup>And God blessed them and God said to them, Be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.

## Made In The Image Of God

In Genesis 1, God is *Elohim*, the all-encompassing God who is *All and In All*. Had Adam and Eve made the correct choice, then all their generations would not have had to suffer for thousands of years. “*And God said, Let us make man in our image*” (Genesis 1:26). This is the same as with The 24 Elders and all the sons that were not begotten of God. “<sup>28</sup>*And God blessed them* [Adam and Eve]. <sup>27</sup>*So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.*” Adam and Eve were married as one flesh. Not only is God dominantly male but He, also, has a female side. Both are in God. Christ is your Husband and *the church* is The Bride. The

Bride will become *one* with Christ in God's type of *love*. Therefore, you are becoming *one* with God, The Father. You are a Son and a reproduction of God. "28 *God blessed them* [He married them] *And God said to them, Be fruitful and multiply* [God wants children] *and replenish the earth and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea and over the fowl of the air and over every living thing that moves upon the earth.*"

### First Covenant Agreement

God told this first couple about the two trees, which is *the first agreement* between God and man (Genesis 2). It is *a covenant*. Furthermore, the name "Elohim," besides being plural, also means "covenant keeper." So God, as *Elohim*, enters into *covenants* or *agreements* which He will not break. It is *a universal agreement*. In the beginning, Adam had it all. He and Eve were in Paradise. They had *Eternal Life* (The Tree of Life), but they, also, had the choice of death. This was *the first agreement*.

Four more *covenants* will be covered. These are *the covenants* God made with various human beings. Then, along came Satan. *The Book of Galatians* tells you very plainly that *The Law* was added 430 years after Abraham. Paul also said, "Where there is no law, there is no [what?] *sin*" (Romans 5:13). If God doesn't reveal His *truth* to you, then you are not responsible. All they had to do was believe God, have *faith* and eat of The Tree of Life. That was *the covenant* and *the agreement*.

Instead, they sold themselves to Satan. In Hebrew, the word "Satan" is "Hay-lale," translated by Jerome (a Cath-

olic priest) into "*Lucifer*." The Hebrew word "*Hay-lale*" means "*bright bolster*." Satan's marriage idol was Baal, *the god of fertility*. Eve bought into Satan's story. When they ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, they recognized they were naked. Only then, did they realize that the woman was *a sex object* used for reproduction. Thus, she became *a slave or property* of the man.

Satan is *the god of this world*. *A seed* would have to come and *redeem the world* by buying them back from Satan's domination (Genesis 3:15). They had followed Satan's system and type of marriage. There were two types of marriages: 1) Godly marriage, which is true love or *agapè* and 2) Satan's marriage, which is *eros, passion, emotion, sex, compatibility* and *philia*. You are presented with *two opposing types of marriage*.

If Adam and Eve had eaten the fruit of The Tree of Life, then you and your children would be in *Paradise*. Wouldn't that be wonderful? But, it didn't happen. In *God's marriage*, both male and female are of each other (one flesh). Because they are *one flesh*, they have God's love or *agapè*. Through God's love, both are concerned for the other's welfare. Satan's marriage (Baal) views the woman as a sex object, a slave and as the man's property.

## The Second Covenant

The First Covenant was given to Adam and Eve. *The second covenant* was *The Promise of The Seed*. *The promise* is that Christ will redeem Adam and Eve's children from Satan (Genesis 3:15). This covenant (which is a different contract) is with Abraham, who was *a faithful and righ-*

*teous* man because he believed God. This is God's *second covenant*, which had *a promise* about *Christ, The Seed*. It did not have any other requirements.

*The promise* was made to Abraham because of Abraham's willingness to sacrifice Isaac. Abraham already met the requirement (his faith), so *this Covenant* became *a promise* without any added conditions. Circumcision would not be necessary after Christ, *The Seed*, came.

Hebrews 11:8-18 <sup>8</sup>By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. <sup>9</sup>By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs of him of the same promise: <sup>10</sup>For he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God. <sup>11</sup>Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had promised. <sup>12</sup>Therefore sprang there even of one and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. <sup>13</sup>These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off and were persuaded of them and embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. <sup>14</sup>For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. <sup>15</sup>And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. <sup>16</sup>But now they desire a better country, that



is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he has prepared for them a city. <sup>17</sup>By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, <sup>18</sup>Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall your seed be called.

Many people are so busy trying to understand what *faith* is that they don't pay attention to what the text actually says (Hebrews 11). When you understand what God *plans to accomplish*, then will you learn the meaning of *faith*.

This chapter shows that it was an act of faith for Abraham to go into an unknown land (Verse 8). Abraham obeyed God and kept His *commandments* and *statutes*. And, yet, there was *no law*. Abraham kept God's *commandments* simply because he had *faith* in God. He had *agàpè love*. When you have *agàpè love*, you will have God's Law in your heart (Romans 13:10). When God told Abraham to go to Canaan, he obeyed, "*for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.*"

## Abraham In Eden?

What if Abraham had been in The Garden of Eden instead of Adam? You can be sure that Abraham would have eaten of The Tree of Life. "*By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles.*" Abraham never lived in a house (only tents). Isaac and Jacob lived in tents too. This was because, "<sup>10</sup>*For he looked for a city which has foundations, whose builder and maker is God.*" This applies to *The New Heaven and The New Earth* (New Jerusalem). The example of *faith* continues

with Sarah conceiving *the promised child*, Isaac (Verse 11). At first, Sarah laughed because she did not think it was possible. Then the story continues, “<sup>12</sup>*Therefore sprang there even of one and him as good as dead [very old], so many as the stars of the sky in multitude and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable.*” God was going to make many nations throughout the generations. A whole host of nations were to come from *the seed* of Sarah and Abraham. Yet, “<sup>13</sup>*These all died in faith, not having received the promises.*”

### Why Circumcision?

This Covenant was sealed with *circumcision*. Why *circumcision*? Being *circumcised* was a sign of being delivered from Satan’s *system* or method of reproduction. It shadows humanity being delivered from Satan on The Eighth Day. The Eighth Day refers to The Eighth Day after The Fall Feast. On that day, Christ reveals *the release* from Satan. Christ said, “*If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink*” (John 7:38). This symbolizes Christ offering The Holy Spirit to everyone. However, this time it is *circumcision of the heart*.

Circumcision symbolized getting rid of the filth of the flesh of Satan’s children. This was to allow a person to have *the right relationship* with God. God chose *circumcision* as the sign of *The Covenant*. Starting with Adam, Satan is trapping most of mankind. Now Christ, The Seed, would change that. Circumcision causes one to bleed, so it was no wonder that Moses’ wife said that he was a bloody man. When Christ came and through His death, His *blood* was spilled. From then on, *circumcision* was no

longer required. The only requirement was *circumcision of the heart* (*true repentance*).

### The Sole Requirement

With *the first agreement*, Adam and Eve's only requirement was to believe. However, they never made it into *the rest*. With Abraham and all who came from his loins, *circumcision* was their only requirement. God said that through Isaac and Jacob, *the promises* would be fulfilled. *This Seed* would come to *buy the people* back from Satan's system. These people all died without receiving *the promises*, but, "*were persuaded of them and embraced them and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.*" The Abrahamic Covenant was made with *circumcision* being a *sign* of the promise. However, *the promises* were still not received in their lifetime.

Notice, "<sup>14</sup>*For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. <sup>15</sup>And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.* [But they did not return. The reason is made clear]. <sup>16</sup>*But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly.*" At that time, they knew there would be *a New Heaven* and *a New Earth* sometime in the future. This is certain because the text says that God, "*has prepared for them a city.* <sup>17</sup>*By faith Abraham offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son.*"

*The promise* would be realized through Isaac and, specifically, The Tribe of Judah. *This covenant* had *promises* that were different from *the later promises* of *The New*

***Covenant.*** So, *this second covenant* was totally based on *faith* and became *a promise* (Galatians 3:17). As a young adult, Isaac was willing to be offered. *The second covenant* had no more requirements, so it became *a promise*. This promise is in the form of *an inheritance*. In fact, *this covenant* did not have an immediate payoff. It was not to be given until *The New Heaven* and *The New Earth* came. This is when The Kingdom of God comes to earth (Hebrews 11:13-16).

Hebrews 4:4-7 <sup>4</sup>For he spoke in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works. <sup>5</sup>And in this place again, if they shall enter into my rest. <sup>6</sup>Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter therein and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief: <sup>7</sup>Again, he limits a certain day, saying in David, To day, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.

### Third Covenant

*The covenant* made with Moses (and a nation) is *the third covenant*. The Seventh Day is a reflection of The Garden of Eden, “<sup>4</sup>*And God did rest the seventh day from all his works.* [This is paralleled with] *enter into my rest.* <sup>6</sup>*Seeing therefore it remains that some must enter therein and they to whom it was first preached entered not in because of unbelief* [no faith], <sup>7</sup>*Again, he limits a certain day* [or time], *saying in David, Today, after so long a time; as it is said, Today if you will hear his voice, harden not your hearts.*” Through David, *the promises* were going to be fulfilled. It was the only way they could enter into *the rest*. That is

why they were *not* allowed to enter into God's *rest* after *the wilderness trek*.

Deuteronomy 5:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And Moses called all Israel and said to them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day, that you may learn them and keep and do them. <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb. <sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers, but with us, even us, who are all of us here alive this day. <sup>4</sup>The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. <sup>5</sup>(I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the word of the LORD: for you were afraid by reason of the fire and went not up into the mount;) saying, <sup>6</sup>I am the LORD thy God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.

## Elderly Moses

*This third covenant* comes at the time when Moses is getting old. *The Book of Deuteronomy* is the *re-writing* of the covenant. *This third covenant* is based on *the second one*. *Exodus* is the history of the covenants. At the end of *Deuteronomy*, Moses dies. Joshua may have completed the last chapter of *Deuteronomy*. Moses talked to the children of Israel about what they were promised in *the third* (Old) *covenant*. “<sup>1</sup>And Moses called all Israel and said to them, Hear, O Israel, the statutes and judgments which I speak in your ears this day [Moses called the people to attention in order to hear about] <sup>2</sup>The LORD our God made a covenant with us in Horeb.” This was at Mount Sinai (Exodus 19 and 20). “<sup>3</sup>The LORD made not this covenant with our fathers.” This is *not the covenant* that was made with Abraham. This is

*a different covenant with a different purpose and different results. Yes, it was based on The Abrahamic Covenant, but it is different, nonetheless. God was making this covenant because something else had to be done.*

## A Mighty Display

God showed Israel a mighty display of His power to reinforce the seriousness of what was transpiring, “*4The LORD talked with you face to face in the mount out of the midst of the fire. 5I stood between the LORD and you at that time, to show you the word of the LORD: for you were afraid by reason of the fire.*” God is a consuming fire so He could not show Himself (Hebrews 12:29). If He had, then Moses would have been burned to a crisp. A powerful figure, an angel, represents God (Acts 7). “*For you were afraid by reason of the fire and went not up into the mount saying, 6I am the LORD your God.*” Now, onto *The Ten Commandments*.

Deuteronomy 5:22-27 <sup>22</sup>These words the LORD spoke to all your assembly in the mount out of the midst of the fire, of the cloud and of the thick darkness, with a great voice: and he added no more. And he wrote them in two tables of stone and delivered them to me. <sup>23</sup>And it came to pass, when he heard the voice out of the midst of the darkness, (for the mountain did burn with fire,) that you came near to me, even all the heads of your tribes and your elders; <sup>24</sup>And you said, Behold, the LORD our God has showed us his glory and his greatness and we have heard his voice out of the midst of the fire: we have seen this day that God does talk with man and he lives. <sup>25</sup>Now therefore why should we die? For this great fire will consume us:

if we hear the voice of the LORD our God any more, then we shall die. <sup>26</sup>For who is there of all flesh, that has heard the voice of the living God speaking out of the midst of the fire, as we have and lived? <sup>27</sup>Go you near and hear all that the LORD our God shall say: and speak you to us all that the LORD our God shall speak to you; and we will hear it and do it.

*The Ten Commandments* was the only law they were to receive because the text says, “*and he added no more.*”

### Moses Takes Dictation

Later, God told Moses to write everything in a book. Moses went up a second time after he had broken the previous tablets and was told, “*Write down all the words I give you in a book.*” Moses recorded all The Judgments, Statutes, Washings, Meal Offerings, Sacrifices, Holy Days, New Moons and Sabbaths. This became *The Law of Moses* which states *the conditions* imposed by *The Old Covenant*. *This third covenant* was not like *the other covenants*, which made certain promises to Abraham. It did not have conditions like *the covenant* with Moses.

Deuteronomy 5:32-33 <sup>32</sup>You shall observe to do therefore as the LORD your God has commanded you: you shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. <sup>33</sup>You shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you, that you may live and that it may be well with you and that you may prolong your days in the land which you shall possess.

What did *this covenant* do? It instructed the people not to

deviate from the course that had been set. How much of *The Law* were they required to follow? The answer is: *all of it*. They could not turn to the left or to the right.

The Israelites had to do *exactly what God said*. “<sup>33</sup>*You shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you...that you may prolong your days in the land.*” So this Covenant was intended to bring *long life, prosperity, abundance and physical blessings*. However, there was *no Salvation*. During this time, God was known as YHWH (JHVH). His *Name* denotes that He *was good, merciful, righteous, just and most Holy*.

Deuteronomy 30:19 I call heaven and earth to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both you and your seed may live.

God made this same offer to Adam and Eve, but the rules were different for a very good reason. In the case of Adam and Eve, God told them what was *right* and what was *wrong*. They had to make a decision regarding what to choose. In Deuteronomy 30:19, God signed *an agreement* with Moses, “*I call heaven and earth to record this day against you.*” What did this Covenant contain? It concerns “*life and death.*”

## Making The Right Choice

This is the same *choice that Adam and Eve* had. They were offered The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. The same options were available in *the agreement* with Moses except additional stipulations *were*



*added*, which were “*blessings and cursings.*” This *agreement* had a blessing and a curse. To keep any part of *The Law of Moses*, you had to keep *all of The Law*. A person could *not miss one part of it*. If they did, they would receive a penalty – death.

If you, as a Christian, think you must keep *The Law of Moses*, then you must *keep it all* (Galatians 3:10). If you do not keep it all, then you are cursed. What does *The Bible* mean when it says, “*you are not under The Law?*” Worldly religious groups believe that it means you are under *The Law* with its penalties. However, in *The Scripture*, you will find it means to not be under *The Law*. It has nothing to do with a penalty. To be *under the penalty* means you are *under a curse*. This *covenant* had two important parts: 1) *life and blessings* and 2) *death and cursings*. To be *under the curse* means to be under the penalty. This *covenant* was a blessing for *life*. God told Adam and Eve that, in The Garden of Eden, there was A Tree of Life or the curse of *death*.

Hebrews 8:1-5 <sup>1</sup>Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such a high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; <sup>2</sup>A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle, which the Lord pitched and not man. <sup>3</sup>For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. <sup>4</sup>For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law: <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was

about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said he, that you make all things according to the pattern showed to you in the mount.

When you study *The Bible* and understand the significance of *this Old Covenant Law*, you must not study selected pieces only. *You must study it all*. All of the pieces (big and small) of the puzzle must fit together. You must look at *The Scriptures* you agree with as well as those *Scriptures* with which you do not agree. You must allow *The Scriptures* to open your eyes to any new *truths*. God allows you to read. This is a process that takes time, prayer and study.

### Priesthood Comparisons

The basic difference between The Priesthood of Melchizedek and The Priesthood of Aaron relates to *The New Covenant* and *The Old Covenant*, “<sup>1</sup>*Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens; <sup>2</sup>A minister of the sanctuary and of the true tabernacle.*” The theme is presented this way because *the old tabernacle* and *The Old Covenant* were *not* the primary intent of God’s *plan*. *The Old Covenant* and *The Tabernacle* were symbolic and only spoke of Christ (John 5:46). They were a type of *the true tabernacle in heaven*, “*which the Lord pitched and not man.*” <sup>3</sup>*For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.* <sup>4</sup>*For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest.*”

If Jesus was on earth at the time of *The Epistle of Hebrews*, then He would not have fulfilled the role of Melchizedek.

He could only be Melchizedek in *heaven* at the right hand of God. In fact, Paul said that if Christ were on *earth*, He could not have been Melchizedek, “*seeing that they are priests that offer gifts according to the law [The Old Covenant] <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things.*”

*The entire Old Covenant includes The Law of Moses. Everything they did was only a shadow or picture of the future heaven or kingdom. The Old Covenant that was made with Moses and The Children of Israel was not real. The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses was just a shadow. The whole Law pointed to Christ (Hebrews 10:1).*

John 5:39-47 <sup>39</sup>Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. <sup>40</sup>And you will not come to me, that you might have life. <sup>41</sup>I receive not honour from men. <sup>42</sup>But I know you, that you have not the love of God in you. <sup>43</sup>I am come in my Father's name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive. <sup>44</sup>How can you believe, which receive honour one of another and seek not the honour that comes from God only? <sup>45</sup>Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust. <sup>46</sup>For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me. <sup>47</sup>But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?

## Search The Scriptures

These are the words from your Savior, “<sup>39</sup>*Search the scrip-*

tures.” *The only Scriptures* that were available at that time was *The Old Testament*. Why should anyone search? The answer is, “*for in them you think you have eternal life.*” The whole argument between The Pharisees and The Sadducees was that The Sadducees did not believe in *the resurrection*. However, The Pharisees did believe in The Resurrection. The Sadducees *did not* understand that there would be a resurrection. They kept waiting for *The Promised Seed*. Scholars and Christians get into arguments because they do not understand the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*.

The controversy regarding whether you have to keep *The Law of Moses* only proves that these combatants still do not have all of the information. *The Holy Scriptures* say, “<sup>39</sup>*are they which testify of me.* <sup>40</sup>*And you will not come to me, that you might have life.*” The only way you can obtain *life* is through Christ or *The New Covenant*. *The New Covenant* is real. It writes God’s Law in your heart because it is not just a shadow. *The purpose of The Old Covenant* (a shadow) with *The Law of Moses* was to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You cannot obtain *everlasting life* under *The Old Covenant*. You can keep *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses* till *the kingdom* comes. But, in doing so, you will never obtain *life*. Jesus said, “<sup>41</sup>*I receive not honour from men.* <sup>42</sup>*But I know you, that you have not the love of God in you* [you do not have God’s *agàpè* love “*In You*”]. <sup>43</sup>*I am come in my Father’s name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive.* <sup>44</sup>*How can you believe.*” Some say, “*Well, what that Scripture really means is...*” Then, all they give is their own opinion. When you hear this, all sorts of warnings should go off in your mind.

## Coming In Whose Name?

Jesus went on to explain about those who come in the name of a greater authority. He said, “<sup>43</sup>*I am come in my Father's name and you receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him you will receive.* [He wanted to know the basis for their actions]. <sup>44</sup>*How can you believe, which receive honour one of another and seek not the honour that comes from God only?* <sup>45</sup>*Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuses you, even Moses, in whom you trust.*”

This was *the purpose* of *The Law*. The first step is to have a person *repent*. The next step, which is through Christ, is for *The Law* to be written in *your heart* (Hebrews 8:10). To have *The Ten Commandments* written in your heart means you are living like Christ. You never think of lying, stealing or breaking any of *The Commandments*. Jesus told the religious leaders, “<sup>46</sup>*For had you believed Moses, you would have believed me: for he wrote of me.* <sup>47</sup>*But if you believe not his writings, how shall you believe my words?*” *The Old Covenant* was a shadow of Christ who brought *The New Covenant*. God writes His Law in your heart through “Christ – *In You*.” *The Law of Moses* (The Letter) cannot please God or *save* you. This Law can only bring you to Christ.

Hebrews 8:5-11 <sup>5</sup>Who serve to the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle: for, See, said he, *that* you make all things according to the pattern showed to you in the mount. <sup>6</sup>But now has he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much

also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. <sup>7</sup>For if that first *covenant* had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. <sup>8</sup>For finding fault with them, he said, Behold, the days come, said the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: <sup>9</sup>Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant and I regarded them not, said the Lord. <sup>10</sup>For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, said the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God and they shall be to me a people. <sup>11</sup>And they shall not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.

*The Old Covenant and The Law* pointed to Christ and was “*a shadow of heavenly things.*” Moses was instructed to build everything according to the pattern that was set down in the heavens. This was the basis for Christ, who “*has he obtained a more excellent ministry* [a better ministry than Moses] *by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant.*”

### Angel Of The Lord

God spoke to the people through an angel saying that *this covenant* (between Israel and God) was not *the same covenant* He made with Abraham and Isaac. The evidence is,

***“<sup>7</sup>For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second.”*** If *The Law of Moses* kept you from sinning, made you righteous and perfect, then why would you need *any other covenant*? The answer is, ***“<sup>8</sup>finding fault with them.”*** What is this fault? The answer is, ***“Behold, the days come, said the LORD, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah”*** (Jeremiah 31:31).

**What is *The New Covenant*?** It is, ***“<sup>9</sup>Not according to the covenant, that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant and I regarded them not, said the Lord. <sup>10</sup>For this is the covenant*** [this is taken right out of Jeremiah 31:31-34. The passage is talking about *The New Covenant* with the church] ***I will put my laws into their mind and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God and they shall be to me a people.”*** This is the vital change in the old procedure. It will bring about the condition, ***“<sup>11</sup>And they shall not teach every man his neighbour and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest.”*** It is God's Holy Spirit in each human that helps them know good from evil.

## **Changing Human Nature**

**What will make the people different?** They will know Him because they will have His Law written in their hearts. **The Letter** (the physical *Law of Moses*) can only bring you to Christ and *repentance* (*The Law* is no longer required) (II Corinthians 3:1-3). ***This covenant ended in 70 A.D. when The Temple was destroyed.***

*The Law of Moses* was only supposed to last until Christ came (Galatians 3:19). How plain could these *Scriptures* be? Once Jesus came, *The Law* that was given to Moses was simply not required! It was no longer in force. You just need to repent when God calls you. *The Law of Moses* was only intended for unrepentant people (I Timothy 1:9). In Hebrew, the word “*beriyth*” means “*covenant*” (Deuteronomy 5). So literally “*beriyth*” means in Hebrew “*to cut in half*” or “*to choose.*” It is *an agreement or covenant* with a choice between one or the other (life or death or blessing or cursing). God’s *agreements* and *promises* are based upon your choosing *life*. In *The New Covenant* you learn that God writes His Laws in your heart and mind.

The word “*covenant*” in Greek means “*terms of the agreement*” (*an inheritance or gift*). *The New Covenant* is a *promise*. It does not have conditions like *The Law of Moses*. There are no other conditions, requirements or choices. It requires *faith* and *repentance*. Some say you must be in both The Letter and in The Spirit. Wrong!

One (The Spirit) is nothing more than *a gift* through *inheritance*. You inherited that right. *The Old Covenant* requires you to choose between two things. You must follow one or the other. It is impossible to do both. You cannot follow The Letter (choose) and The Spirit (receive the promise). You cannot: 1) choose and also 2) inherit.

It is one or the other. You cannot do *works* to obtain a reward and still consider it *a gift*. *The first covenant* was a matter of choice between The Tree of Life or The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. *This second covenant* was based purely on *faith*, with no other conditions.



## Abrahamic Covenant

*The second covenant is The Abrahamic covenant, which The Old and New Covenants are based upon. It was based totally on faith and, because Abraham was The Father of The Faithful, it was counted to him as righteousness.*

The Abrahamic Covenant did not demand or require one to keep *The Law of Moses*. Because of his faith, Abraham kept *The Commandments*, statutes and *The Law* (Romans 2:15). *The Law of Moses* consisted of *blessings and cursings*. It literally means “*to cut us under the flesh*” (a division). You either get the blessings or you get the cursings. It is one or the other. You had to keep *all The Laws*, or you would be cursed. What was wrong with *the first covenant*? The fault was with the people. So God, as YHWH (JHVH), *Merciful, Good, Righteous, Just and Holy*, gave a Law to people who were flawed. They were unrepentant, hard-hearted and stubborn. *The Law of Moses* was made for disobedient people (I Timothy 1:9). *The Law* was not needed for those who were repentant or *righteous* through Christ. The stubborn people were given a choice just like Adam and Eve. They just did not make the right choice.

I Timothy 1:3-9 <sup>3</sup>As I besought you to abide still at Ephesus, when I went into Macedonia, that you might charge some that they teach no other doctrine, <sup>4</sup>Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do. <sup>5</sup>Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart and of a good conscience and of faith unfeigned: <sup>6</sup>From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling; <sup>7</sup>Desiring

to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm. <sup>8</sup>But we know that the law is good, if a man use it lawfully; <sup>9</sup>Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

Paul was warning The Church not to engage in this kind of dangerous action, “<sup>3</sup>*As I besought you...that you might charge some that they teach no other doctrine, <sup>4</sup>Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies [saying you are the children of Abraham] which minister questions, Rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do.*” When you have *the truth*, it fits together beautifully. When you don’t have *the truth*, you have one question after another without any *valid answers*.

### Written In The Heart

You keep *The Commandments* because they are written in your heart. Christians must keep *The Commandments* better than they kept *The Law of Moses* (Matthew 5:20 and 6:33). “<sup>5</sup>*Now the end [goal] of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart and of a good conscience and of faith unfeigned.*”

It takes *faith* to keep *The Commandments*. It, also, takes an honesty in your inner being. *The purpose of The Commandments* is to lead or bring you to *agàpè love*. Only then are you fulfilling *The Law* (Romans 13:10). Remember, it is not *an eros* type of love, it is not *philia* love and it is not a matter of emotion. It is *agàpè love*. Some church

groups insist that you must keep *The Law of Moses* (or at least certain parts of it). How do you decide which part to keep? Some say certain parts point to Christ. Wrong. *It all points to Christ.* Even *The Commandments* point to Christ. The only goal of *The Commandments* (as a whole) is *agàpè love*. God is love. Christ is love. It all points to Christ.

If you must keep *The Law of Moses*, which parts do you keep? The answer is “*all parts.*” If you don’t keep all of *The Law*, then you will come under the curse. “*6From which some having swerved have turned aside to vain jangling [what kind of jangling?] 7Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.* [If you are not under *The Law*, you don’t have to teach it, do you? He tells you how to use *The Law*]. *8But we know that the law is good.*” Of course, *The Law* is good.

*The Law of Moses* gave everyone a choice between *life* or *death*. It was a stepping-stone to *repent* and get to Christ. The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil were different choices. “*8We know the law is good, if a man [what?] use it lawfully.*” This means that you should use *The Law* the way God intended.

### Law Written For Whom?

How did God want *The Law* to be used? Please underline Verse 9 and, perhaps, you should memorize it, “*9Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man.*” *The Law* is not made for Christians with The Spirit of God within them. Your sins are covered by the blood of Christ and His *righteousness*. Now, how do you use it lawfully?

Here is the answer, “*The law is not made for a righteous man but for the lawless and disobedient.*” Does that sound like it is important for Christians? Rather it says, “*for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers.*” For whom did God make *The Law*? It was made only for *unconverted people*. That is its *sole purpose* according to God. That is why they were given a *choice*. *The Law* was made to *control the ungodly*.

It was filled with works and religious acts that were a burden. Humans do not naturally (inherently) know *right from wrong*. God said, “*Oh that [if] there were such a heart in them*” (Deuteronomy 5:29). This concerns *repentance*. God pleaded with them to *repent*. Galatians 3:23-24 states, “*to be under the Law is to be under a schoolmaster.*” They did not have enough schooling (prayer and faith) to *truly repent*. *Real repentance* is a condition in your mind whereby God can write His Laws in your heart.

II Corinthians 3:1-6 <sup>1</sup>Do we begin again to commend ourselves? Or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? <sup>2</sup>You are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: <sup>3</sup>Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. <sup>4</sup>And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: <sup>5</sup>Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God; <sup>6</sup>Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament; not of the letter, but of the spirit: for the letter kills, but the spirit gives life.

Regarding this matter of commendations, does this mean that churches are to be incorporated? This idea sounds like it was written for today's religious organizations. Rather, Paul states, "*2You are our epistle written in our hearts.*" What is *The New Covenant*? God writes His Laws in your heart and your mind. That is how Christians are "*known and read of all men.*"

### A Change Of Nature

Christians must have a change of nature (Romans 2:14-15). You don't belong to *a specific church group* with a specific name, isolated and incorporated, "*3Forasmuch as you are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink [not the letter], but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone [no Law of Moses], but in fleshy tables of the heart.*" God writes His Laws in your heart. Can you see Him writing all *The Laws* about The Holy Days, Lists of Unleavened Bread, *meats, drinks* and on and on? How could it all be written in your heart? Can you see God writing Christmas and Easter in your heart? No, He is writing *The Laws* in your heart which are far more *righteous*. His *Law* is far more demanding than *The Law of Moses*.

*The Law* that was given to Moses as *a covenant* in *The Old Testament* was specifically for *carnal, unconverted people*. *The Law* is *Holy, just and righteous*. *The Law* is to lead and bring you to Christ. "*4And such trust have we through Christ to God-ward: 5Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of God.*" In other words, as a Christian, you must be humble and always open to learning *truths* as they are revealed

when you study your *Bible*. You must always be teachable and want to know if you are wrong. You repent when you are wrong since your desire is to change and grow *spiritually*. You never act as if you have all or enough of *the truth*, “*Who also has made us able ministers of the new testament.*”

You cannot be in *The Letter of The Law* because *The Letter of The Law kills*. The Spirit gives *life*, but if you don't keep *the whole Law* in every detail, then you will be cursed. Since all have sinned and come short of The Glory of God, everyone would be dead. Study Romans 5 through Romans 8 where Paul explains that which was supposed to be good for him (speaking of *The Law*). However, it only brought death. *The purpose of The Law* is to make you understand how bad you really are (Romans 5:20). That is it. And that is why when people offered sacrifices, they offered animal sacrifices.

### Why Animal Sacrifices?

Did you ever wonder why they offered animal sacrifices? It is because they were carnal, just like an animal or a devouring beast. It was their acknowledgement that they were sinners (this happened with The Azazel Goat when they released him into the wilderness). *This goat was a symbol or type of Satan* (who will be chained for 1000 years because of his beastlike carnality). Until *The Seed* came and paid *the ultimate sacrifice* for everyone's sins, it only showed that they kept sinning. Remember, the priests could never give an offering that would make them perfect (Hebrews 8, Hebrews 9:9 and Hebrews 10:1). It was a reminder that they were, also, sinners. That was *the purpose of The Law*.

The Apostle Paul said he kept *The Law* blamelessly (Philippians 3:6). Paul kept *The Whole Law*. That doesn't mean that he kept it perfectly, but he kept it. Every time Paul did something wrong, he had to do *a work of The Law* because he was under *The Law*. Paul sacrificed giving a meal offering, a washing or putting leavened bread out of his house (during the feast).

At that time, Paul was under *the schoolmaster*. If he touched a dead animal, then he stayed out of the camp until evening. Under *The Law*, they were all in bondage, which was a reminder that they were sinners and needed Christ. Israel did not understand this. Some *worldly churches* say that you are not under *The Law*.

They believe they only have to have *love*. This is not *agàpè*, of course, because they didn't know *agàpè* (God's love). They only know "*eros*." So they have gone from *The Law* that was supposed to bring them to Christ and returned to Satan with *eros* or *passion* (*emotion*). They are still Satan's children. They wail, roll on the floor and cry. They think it is all right to sin because they are now under *The New Covenant* of love (*eros*). The only way anyone can receive *agàpè* is to have God's *Holy Spirit* within them. God is *life* and unless you obtain God's love (which is a moral and an intellectual love), you do not have God's Law in your heart and mind.

You obey *The Law* because you have it written in your heart and your mind, through *agàpè*. God's nature (heart), through "Christ – *In You*," makes you hate sin because it is against *agàpè* to sin. You do not need a written Law to tell you what sin is!

## Ministration Of Death

**II Corinthians 3:7** But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be done away

*“<sup>7</sup>But if the ministration of death [death is what Paul calls *The Old Covenant*] written and engraven in stones, was glorious.”* Even *The Ten Commandments* are a shadow. How are they a shadow? Since a shadow has darkness or an evil meaning, the shadow is also a parable. Jesus spoke in parables to confuse the unbelievers. They are in the dark or shadow. God is light with no darkness (I John 1:5). Keeping the first five commandments is loving God. Keeping the last five is loving your neighbor. In doing so, you enter God’s rest. That is *the whole purpose* of *The Ten Commandments*. That is what they foreshadow (to have God’s Law written in your heart). The goal of *The Ten Commandments* is love, but it does not give you *agàpè*. *“<sup>7</sup>But if the ministration of death, written and engraven in stones, was glorious, so that the children of Israel could not stedfastly behold the face of Moses for the glory of his countenance; which glory was to be [what was to happen?] done away.”* Focus upon the words “*done away.*” According to Paul, *The Old Covenant*, which includes *The Law of Moses*, does not pertain to Christians. Do you believe Paul and God’s *Scriptures*?

When you read *The Books of Romans, Galatians* and *Hebrews* about “*under The Law,*” it means “*under the school-master.*” That was *the purpose* of *The Law*. There are only



ten places in *The Bible* that mention *being under The Law*. Read what it really means.

Galatians 3:19-20 <sup>19</sup>Wherefore then serve the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. <sup>20</sup>Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe.

To be under *The Law* is explained, “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serve the law?*” Why do you serve it? The word “*serve*” in Greek is not in *The Bible*. If you look at *Strong's Concordance* and look up the word “*serve*” in Galatians 3:19, it is blank. It is not there. It should read, “*Wherefore then the Law?*” In other words, why *The Law*? That is an accurate translation because the word “*serve*” is not there.

## Purpose Of The Law

What was the purpose of *The Law*? In The King James version, the text says, “<sup>19</sup>*Wherefore then serve the law?*” In other words, why bother keeping it? A better translation is, “*What purpose then has the Law?*” No scripture can make *the purpose* of *The Old Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* any clearer. “*It was added [why?] because of transgressions [for how long?] till the seed should come.*” So, it will last only until *The Seed* (Christ) should come. It can-

not last beyond that time if you have repented, “*to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator.*” To use it lawfully, it is only for the ungodly, unconverted and rebellious people. If you who think you must keep *The Law of Moses*, you must be rebellious and unconverted. This instruction also includes *The Ten Commandments* because it says, “*written on tables of stone.*” *The Commandments* are a shadow. *The Commandments* were given to bring you to Christ. Christ said, “*You think you can receive eternal life from doing the works of The Old Testament? The Law speaks about Christ as the reality*” (paraphrased).

So *The Law* was only added because of transgressions until Christ should come, “<sup>19</sup>*to whom the promise was made; <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law.*” If they would have chosen to keep *all The Law*, it would have worked. Human nature won’t make it possible for you to do this. They also would have had to keep it all perfectly, “<sup>22</sup>*the scripture has concluded, all under sin.*” No one can keep *The Law* perfectly. Only Christ did. It is impossible to keep *The Law* perfectly, so why keep any of its works? What part do you keep? You cannot keep any part of *The Law*. You must have “Christ – *In You*,” so that God will write His Law into your heart (Colossians 1:27). With *The Law* in your heart, the thought of sinning never comes into your mind.

## Curse Of The Law

Galatians 3:10 For as many as are of the works of

the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continues not in all things which are written in The Book of The Law to do them.

**This is the only way you are under the penalty. Under *The Law* does not mean under the penalty. Being under the curse means being under the penalty. This is why The Galatians were confused about these matters.**

Galatians 3:21-29 <sup>21</sup>Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life verily righteousness should have been by the law. <sup>22</sup>But the scripture has concluded all under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. <sup>23</sup>But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up to the faith which should afterwards be revealed. <sup>24</sup>Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to Christ, that we might be justified by faith. <sup>25</sup>But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. <sup>26</sup>For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. <sup>27</sup>For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if you be Christ's, then are you Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise.

**Is *The Law* against *The Promises* of God? Paul said, “*God forbid.*” He explains why *righteousness* cannot come by means of *The Law*. No one could keep it all, so everyone is under the curse because sin is a transgression of *The Law*. *The Law* tells you what sin is, “*that the promise by***

*faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that [what?] believe [it is a matter of faith]. <sup>23</sup>But before faith came, we were kept [where?] under the law, [now, find out what under The Law means] shut up to the faith which should afterwards be revealed. <sup>24</sup>Wherefore the law was our [what?] schoolmaster.”*

To be under *The Law* is to be under a tutor or teacher. Under *The Law* never meant under the penalty. Under *The Law* means under *the schoolmaster* or *tutor*. To be under the penalty, you are under the curse, “<sup>24</sup>*Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us to Christ [so you could understand you are a sinner and repent], that we might be justified by faith.” The Law is only supposed to bring you to Christ and last until The Seed should come. It ended there.*

## The Schoolmaster

*The Law* is good, just and Holy, but for whom? It is for the unconverted, the unrighteous and the ungodly. Once you repent and believe, you are no longer under that *schoolmaster*. Nor are you under the curse, “<sup>25</sup>*But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.”*

Here is your biblically plain definition, “<sup>6</sup>*For you are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus. <sup>27</sup>For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have [what?] put on Christ. <sup>28</sup>There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus. <sup>29</sup>And if you be Christ’s, then are you [what?] Abraham’s seed and heirs according to the promise.” This promise was never made to Moses.*

Galatians 4:1-5 <sup>1</sup>Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differs nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; <sup>2</sup>But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. <sup>3</sup>Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: <sup>4</sup>But when the fullness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, <sup>5</sup>To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.

When Christ came, the need for *the schoolmaster* ended. Being under *The Law* was over. That is the reason *the temple* was destroyed. Christians, themselves, became The Temple of God, “<sup>3</sup>Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements [this is about human efforts and traditions that are] *of the world.*” This is not all because, “<sup>4</sup>But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.” Was the woman made under the penalty of *The Law*?

No, she was made under *the schoolmaster* or *governor*. Why was this done? It was, “<sup>5</sup>To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons.” This is to become Sons of God. These people are bought back from being under *the schoolmaster*. Is it getting simpler now? Do not be concerned that Christianity is getting too simple to understand.

Galatians 6:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, you which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering yourself, lest you also be tempted. <sup>2</sup>Bear you one another's burdens and so fulfill the law of Christ.

**What Laws are Christians to keep? You must be careful when trying to help somebody who has not been called or is not ready to be saved. You should, “*Bear you one another’s burdens and so fulfill the law of Christ.*” That is *The Law* Christians are under.**

**Romans 13:10 Love works no ill to his neighbour:  
therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.**

**Christ said that all *The Law* must be fulfilled (Matthew 5:18). Paul clearly states *The Law* is fulfilled when you, as a Christian, finally have God’s *agàpè* love. It shows that Christ is cleansing you (Romans 13:10). He is making you blameless and Holy. He is making you *perfect*. How? It is by making you like Christ and God. This is *The Law* you are under. *You are under The Law of Christ*, “<sup>10</sup>*Love [agàpè] works no ill to his neighbour: therefore love [agàpè] is the fulfilling of the law.*” Always remember *agàpè*, not *eros* or *philia*.**

## **Fourth Covenant**

**Now you have *The Law* of Christ. God made *the fourth covenant* (a New Covenant) based on *spiritual promises*, and it was made for you. *The New Covenant* is not just the definition of sin according to *The Law*. *The New Covenant* has a much higher requirement because God writes or imbeds His Law in your heart and mind, through The Holy Spirit. This New Covenant is God’s *fourth agreement* or *contract* based on a promise (gift).**

***The New Covenant* does not have a choice of *life* or *death*. *The New Covenant* is *The Gift of Inheritance*.**

I John 5:17 All unrighteousness is sin: and there is a sin not to death.

**“<sup>17</sup>All unrighteousness is sin.”** What is all unrighteousness? **“And there is a sin not to death.”** Any sin that you commit that is forgiven is not to death. Christians have a higher requirement.

Matthew 5:20-24 <sup>20</sup>For I say to you, That except your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees, you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven. <sup>21</sup>You have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment: <sup>22</sup>But I say to you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, You fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. <sup>23</sup>Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has ought against you; <sup>24</sup>Leave there your gift before the altar and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother and then come and offer your gift.

What is the definition of sin for a Christian? Is it any type of unrighteousness? The answer is “no.” A person must, **“*exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees***, [these are the leaders who followed The Law of Moses. Consequently, following that course means] ***you shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven*** [The Kingdom of God].” Christians are held to a much higher standard as the text clearly indicates.

Forgiveness and humility are great keys to all of this. *“<sup>23</sup>Therefore if you bring your gift to the altar and there remember that your brother has ought against you; <sup>24</sup>Leave there your gift before the altar and go your way; first be reconciled to your brother.”* This is far beyond *The Letter of The Law*.

## Hatred Is Murder

So, if you hate your brother, then you are guilty of murder (study Matthew 5, 6 and 7). You do not have to, literally, take something from your brother. You only need to *think about stealing*. *“All unrighteousness”* is *“sin”* if you do not have *agapè*. Unless *agapè* is written in your heart, it is unrighteous. *The Commandments’ aim* is to bring you to *agapè*. *The Law* is a shadow of *agapè*. It all leads to Christ because Christ is *agapè*. *“God is love”* (I John 4:8). That is the type of heart you need.

Romans 2:11-16 <sup>11</sup>For there is no respect of persons with God. <sup>12</sup>For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law; <sup>13</sup>(For not the hearers of the law are just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified. <sup>14</sup>For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves: <sup>15</sup>Which show the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness and *their* thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;) <sup>16</sup>In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.



**You do not steal** (you do not think of stealing). **You do not covet** (the thought never enters your mind). **You do not commit adultery** (your mate means too much to you). **You do not defame God because you love Him** (never think of anything but The One God as your Creator). **You agàpè** (love) **Him**, “<sup>14</sup>*For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these having not the law, are [what?] a law to themselves [not The Law of Moses] <sup>15</sup>Which show the work of the law written in their hearts [by a change of nature], their conscience also bearing witness and their thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another. <sup>16</sup>In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.*” How does God write His Law in your heart, so your nature literally changes?

Hebrews 7:11-12 <sup>11</sup>If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law) what further need was there that another priest should rise after the order of Melchizedek and not be called after the order of Aaron? <sup>12</sup>For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law.

Some ministers try to make this be about tithing. It is laughable when you try to say Hebrews 7 is about tithing. The subject is, “<sup>11</sup>*If therefore perfection were by the Levitical priesthood, (for under it the people received the law).*” This was under *The Law of the schoolmaster*. *The Law* was changed from The Letter to The Spirit.

Under Melchizedek, it is a change of nature. It becomes a Law in your heart. It is written in your heart. How?

If you have agàpè, then you establish *The Law* and you are more righteous than *The Law*. Through God's Holy Spirit, you cannot do anything but keep *The Law* in your mind and heart. It would be foreign to your nature not to keep *The Law*. The thought of sinning would not be a part of your thinking, let alone actually doing anything wrong.

II Peter 1:4-7 <sup>4</sup>Whereby are given to us exceeding great and precious promises: that by these you might be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust. <sup>5</sup>And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge; <sup>6</sup>And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness; <sup>7</sup>And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.

All unrighteousness is sin. However, there is no unrighteousness if you have *agàpè*. That is why *agàpè* covers a multitude of sins. With *agàpè*, you are not going to sin. You only grow *spiritually*, “<sup>5</sup>*And beside this, giving all diligence, add to your faith.*” This is the requirement to get under *The New Covenant*. *You should repent and be baptized* (Acts 2:38).

## Generation Of Vipers

When John, The Baptist came, he told the people that their Husband was coming (John 3:29). He told The Pharisees and The Sadducees, “*Oh you generation of vipers and snakes, why are you here? Repent*” (paraphrased). Repentance is required for *this agreement* (*The New Covenant*)

that God made with humanity. Peter says, “<sup>5</sup>*add to your faith virtue; and to virtue knowledge.*” This is how a Christian lives and how God writes His Law in your heart and mind.

As you come to know goodness, which makes you understand knowledge, then knowledge leads you to moderation with no extremism, “<sup>6</sup>*And to knowledge temperance; and to temperance patience; and to patience godliness* [you can learn to become like God]; <sup>7</sup>*And to godliness brotherly kindness; and to brotherly kindness charity.*”

This is the process God uses to write His Law in your heart. So, in *faith*, you believe. Christians have received The Earnest of The Inheritance promised in *The New Covenant* through God's *Holy Spirit*. As you live this human existence, going from *faith* to *virtue* to *knowledge* to *patience* to *brotherly kindness*, you finally come to having *God's Law written in your hearts*. Study *The Royal Law* (James 2). The Law of Christ is The Royal Law because it is from The King. It is from Christ, Himself and is “Christ – *In You*” (Colossians 1:27).

These are *the four covenants*. Each has a *different purpose*. God lets Himself be known by using different titles (names) for His *different plans* and *purposes*. He is called Father and everyone who wants to be Heirs are and all will become Sons. That is *The New Covenant*. You are no longer under *the schoolmaster* or *The Law of Moses*. You are now under *The Law of Christ* which will write God's Laws in your heart and completely change your nature. This *the fourth covenant*, which is *The New Covenant*, makes you God's Son, like Christ.

## **Fifth Agreement**

**The 14<sup>th</sup> Chapter of this book covers God's *fifth agreement*, which is His *kingdom*. It is when Christ will restore all that was lost in The Garden of Eden. With The Fifth Agreement, God, The Father, becomes *All and In All*, by making all things new (Revelation 21:5)!**

## Chapter 10

### WHAT WAS ADDED TO THE LAW?

The Apostle Paul said, “*By the works of the law shall no flesh [mankind] be justified*” (Galatians 2:16). Paul said Christians could not obtain any type of righteousness by *The Law* (Galatians 2:21). Paul said, “*Wherefore then serves the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator*” (Galatians 3:19). This Law, which was *added*, was extremely important because it was to be in force only *until The Promised Seed* should come (Galatians 3:17).

Works and human effort (Greek “*ergon*” or “*labor*”) can never make an individual right – nor can they justify anyone in God’s sight (Galatians 3:11). *The Law* could have given righteousness, but it did not because everyone has sinned (Galatians 3:21-22). Paul clearly stated that *The Law* was *the schoolmaster* and was only employed as homework. With enough study and prayer, *The Law* would eventually bring you to Christ. When you become a Christian, you are no longer under *this schoolmaster* (Galatians 3:24-25). What exactly was *this Added Law*?

### Three Laws

In determining which Law was *added*, there are only three choices: 1) *The Torah* (*The First Five Books of The Old Tes-*

tament, which includes *The Law of Moses*), 2) *The Talmud* (*The Oral Law*) and 3) *The Law of Moses* (Commandments, Statutes and Judgments).

## The Torah

*The Torah* is the written *Law of Moses*, which makes up *The First Five Books of The Old Testament*. A copy of this Law was to be placed on the side of *the mercy seat of the ark in the temple* (Deuteronomy 31:26). Only the two tablets of stone (which had *The Ten Commandments*) were placed inside *the mercy seat* (Exodus 25:16). There is great significance in having only *The Ten Commandments* reside within *The Ark of The Covenant*. Paul states *the purpose of The Torah*.

Hebrews 10:1 For the law having a shadow of good things to come [Christ] and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect.

*The Law* (Hebrew "*Torah*" and Greek "*Nomos*") is composed of *The First Five Books of The Bible* (Pentateuch). It was intended only to depict (be a reminder) what was to come. The sacrifices were only a shadow of things to come. Paul separates the sacrifices from *The Torah* because sacrifices started before *The Torah* or *The Law* was written. Sacrificing actually began with *righteous* Abel. What, exactly, did *The Torah* and the sacrifices foreshadow? Jesus said that The Pharisees believed they could obtain Eternal Life by following *The Scriptures* (John 5:39). Christ said, "*They [The Scriptures] are they which testify of me.*" *The Law*

and the sacrifices were designed to foreshadow Christ, who is The Sacrificed Lamb. This was *The Message* from the foundation of the world. *Ritual sacrifices* occurred for almost 4,000 years until Christ became *the final sacrifice* for all mankind. *The Torah* and the sacrifices foretell Christ, *The Messiah*. This reveals *the true purpose* of *The Law* or *Torah*.

## The Oral Law

What was *the purpose* of The Oral Law? Jesus said The Pharisees (The Sanhedrin) sit in Moses' seat and that Israel was to do everything they instructed (Matthew 23:1-3). Why is this? It is because they sit in Moses' seat. He explained how The Sanhedrin, The Mosaic Court, were in a position over Israel (just as Moses was).

When did this Oral Law begin? (Read all of Exodus 18). Moses passed on to the elders the authority to *sit in his seat* (the smaller matters of *The Law*). This is the beginning of The Oral or spoken Law (Exodus 18). This helped Moses endure his overwhelming job. A good example of how The Oral Law was used with *The Law of Moses* is found in *the process of fasting* on Atonement. The idea of fasting on The Day of Atonement does not come from The Written Law but from The Oral Law. *The Law* given by God to Moses does not state anything about The Day of Atonement (eating, drinking or fasting).

*The Law of Moses* declares that The Israelites were supposed to afflict their souls and not work on The Day of Atonement. However, there is no commandment that says to fast on The Day of Atonement (Leviticus 16:29). To “af-

*flict*” one’s soul in Hebrew means “*to humble*” oneself (Strong’s 6031 “*looking down*”). There is no mention of fasting. The entire concept of fasting on Atonement came from The Oral Law of the elders and was recorded in *The Talmud*. God is against fasting on The Day of Atonement because He wants humility and concern for others. Read all of Isaiah 58.

### Foreshadow Christ

*The purpose of The Torah* was to foreshadow Christ. In addition, The Oral Law was for The Pharisees who sat in Moses’ seat. It was given so they could settle the smaller questions about God’s Law. What was *the purpose and intent of The Law of Moses*? How did *The Law of Moses* come about? Paul referred to it as the works or deeds of *The Law*. This was The Administration of Moses, because following The Letter of *The Law* by human effort (works) can never change you or anyone else. Once you perceive *the real purpose, God’s purpose*, for each Law, then *The Bible* will *scripturally* reveal which Law was *added*. That Law was only intended to bring you to Christ and then it was to *end* (Hebrews 8:13).

Paul declares how *this added Law* (covenant) was to vanish or cease. When *the temple* was destroyed in 70 A.D., *The Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* ended. Remember, you cannot keep *The Law of Moses* without the temple.

Summarizing:

- 1) The Added Law came 430 years after *the covenant* with Abraham. The Abrahamic Covenant



was instituted about 1,900 to 2,000 B.C. So, 430 years later means this added law was instituted around 1,400 to 1,500 B.C. That is exactly the time of Moses.

- 2) Paul said the added law was the one given at Mount Sinai. This Law was *The Old Covenant* which was a Covenant of Bondage (Galatians 4:24-25).
- 3) This added law was intended to be *a schoolmaster* and bring a person to Christ (Galatians 3:24). Then, this Law ended (Galatians 3:17).
- 4) The reason this Law *was added* was because Israel transgressed God's other Laws (Galatians 5:19).
- 5) Finally, if this Law *was added*, then it must have been added to a pre-existing law.

### What Was The Law Added To?

Once the history of The Added Law is *biblically* proven, everything becomes crystal clear. How did it come about? What was its purpose? Consequently, *Galatians* will become one of the simplest of Paul's letters to understand. Deuteronomy 5 proves what this Law was *added to* and Acts 7 details the history. Moses declares how Israel received *The Old Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* (Deuteronomy 5:2-21). Moses said that when Israel came to Mount Horeb in Sinai, God gave them *The Old Covenant*. You read how God *spoke face to face* (through an angel) with Moses (Verse 4). Then He spoke through the midst of the fire to Israel. This was before Moses went up into

the mount to receive *The Ten Commandments*, which was written in stone.

### God Spoke Directly

God spoke directly to Israel by giving them *The Ten Commandments*. When He finished giving *The Ten Commandments*, Moses said that God *added no more* (Verse 22). Re-read this verse to see that God only spoke *The Ten Commandments* and *added* nothing else. Any Law that *was added* after this must be part of The Added Law. The people said they no longer wanted to hear God *directly* (Verses 23-28). They were too afraid so they only wanted to hear Moses. They no longer wanted *direct contact with God*. What was God's attitude regarding their behavior? God agreed to do it their way. God said, "*O that there were such a heart in them, that they would fear me and keep all my commandments always, that it might be well with them and with their children for ever.*" This is the essence of *The New Covenant*, to have His Law written in your heart and mind. Remember, that after God spoke *The Ten Commandments* directly, *nothing else was added*. When Christ comes, God will write His Law in your heart, which will change your human nature (Jeremiah 31:31-33 and Romans 2:14-15). What God really wanted from Israel was for them to keep His *Commandments* in their hearts. He did not want to *add* anything else.

The rich young man asked Jesus what he must do to obtain *Eternal Life*. Jesus told him to keep *The Ten Commandments*. The rich man said that he had kept them from his youth. He, also, asked what he lacked. Jesus told him to sell what possessions he had and give the proceeds to the

poor. Then he was invited to follow Christ. The rich man could not bring himself to do this. Christ, then, knew the rich man's heart.

In order to receive *Eternal Life*, God wants you to have His *Commandments* written in your heart (*The New Covenant*). This is what God wanted all along for Israel when He gave them *The Ten Commandments*. Stephen gave an account of how God made His *covenant* with Abraham and then told about The Israelites' delivery from Egypt. The Israelites at Mount Sinai heard God give *the lively oracles* (Acts 7:30-39).

It was extremely important to know what *these lively oracles* were. Stephen said that Israel disobeyed these oracles. This transgression is specified in Galatians 3:19.

## The Lively Oracles

What are *these lively oracles* and what was The Added Law? First, you must check the meaning of these two words in Greek: "*live*" and "*oracles*." In Strong's Concordance "*to live*" (#2198) is a verb and an action meaning "*to live*" or "*make alive*." Now, for the word "*oracles*" (Strong's #3051 and #3052). It is "*an utterance of God*" or God directly speaking His *words* to Israel. The lively oracles are God's *words* that are *life giving*. These *life giving words* of God were *The Ten Commandments* (Deuteronomy 5:22). Paul said, "*What advantage then has the Jew? Much every way: chiefly [what's important] because that to them [The Israelites] were committed the oracles of God*" (Romans 3:1-2). Paul said the advantage The Jews had is that they received *The Ten Commandments* which gave

***Eternal Life.*** In The New Heaven and The New Earth, in order to enter New Jerusalem and be able to eat of The Tree of Life, a person must have kept God's *Commandments* (Revelation 22:14).

God added nothing more. Plainly, and without human interpretation, God said that He only wants His *Ten Commandments* written in your heart and *nothing more*.

### The Added Law

Let *The Bible* identify *The Added Law* for you. Stephen said, "*To whom our fathers would not obey*" (Acts 7:39). This is the transgression that made God give additions to *The Ten Commandments* (which God directly spoke to Israel). From this point on, whatever God gave to Moses is The Added Law. After receiving *The Ten Commandments*, Stephen said The Israelites told Aaron to make them "*gods*" (Verse 40). Then, they made the golden calf. They broke God's command by making an idol (Verse 41). Right after God verbally gave them *The Ten Commandments*, they transgressed. So, God *added The Law* which was to be a bondage for them (Galatians 4:24). God gave a Law to them that had blessings and cursings. Stephen explained what God did, "*Then God turned and gave them up to worship the host of heaven*" (Acts 7:42).

After God gave them *The Ten Commandments*, The Israelites did not want to hear God directly (Deuteronomy 5). God said He wished Israel had *repentant hearts*. Then, what did God do? Moses went up to God, alone, and received *The Added Law*. God spoke to Moses on The Mount and gave him *The Commandments*, Statutes and

**Judgments (Verse 31). They had to keep it in its entirety (Galatians 3:10). If you broke one part, you became guilty of breaking every part of it. If you believe you must keep *this Added Law*, then you must keep it *all*. A person cannot decide to keep only certain parts because they *feel* Christ fulfilled other parts. In fact, Christ has fulfilled the whole *Law of Moses*. You must keep it all or you are guilty of breaking it all (James 2:10).**

**That was the reason for the conference in Acts 15 concerning circumcision and *The Added Law*. What Law was *added*? It was *The Law* given to Moses after The Israelites sinned by constructing the golden calf. *The Law of Moses* was *The Added Law*. *The Bible* plainly proves it! *This Added Law*, given to Moses, could not *justify* anyone. This Law could not make anyone *righteous*. It could not make anyone perfect. Paul asked if a person thought they would be perfect by keeping *The Law of Moses* (Galatians 3:3 and II Corinthians 3). Paul tried to tell The Galatians why they had to perform all of *The Law of Moses* in order to be *righteous*. Of course, this was impossible. That was the reason why Paul said *The Law entered* (or was *added*). It was because it was obvious that no one but Christ could keep *The Law*. *The Added Law* was intended to show a person that they were a sinner (Romans 5:20). This was the only reason *The Law of Moses* was *added* to *The Ten Commandments* and Moses was to administer the added Law that God gave him.**

### **Why The Law Was Added?**

***The Added Law*, or *The Law of Moses*, includes The Oral Law. This was because The Israelites were carnal and unrepentant. The Apostle Paul said there were those in the**

church who desired to be teachers of *The Law*. There were many converted Jews, including The Pharisees, who were zealous for *The Law* (Acts 21:20). Paul said that these people did not understand *the purpose* of *The Law* (I Timothy 1:7-10). Remember, this Added Law was a *schoolmaster* that was only intended to bring them (from yet another direction) to Christ. Very clearly, Paul explained why God added *The Law of Moses*. “*Knowing this, that the law is not made for a righteous man* [once baptized you are righteous through Christ], *but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers*” (Verse 9).

*The Law* was added because people were sinners and unrepentant. The Added Law, *The Law of Moses*, was included as a burden to bring them to Christ. There is great significance regarding *the tablets* of *The Ten Commandments* being the only items in *The Ark of The Covenant*. The only way you can *receive mercy* is by letting God (through Christ) write *The Ten Commandments* in your heart. God wrote *The Ten Commandments* on stone to illustrate how they were receiving *this Added Law of Moses* because of their unrepentant, stone-like hearts. Paul stated that God does not want you to keep The Letter of *The Law* written in stone (unrepentant) but in the fleshly tables of your heart (II Corinthians 3:3). This is *repentance* and one's heart (desire) becomes loving toward God and His *creation*. The Added Law only remained until Christ came. Once Christ came, *The Law of Moses* fulfilled its *Godly purpose* of bringing you to Christ. Now, God writes His Law (*Ten Commandments*) and *The New Covenant* in your heart (those who repent and receive mercy).

## Discerning Various Laws

The difference between *The Torah* (first five books), *The Law of Moses* (Added Law) and The Oral Law (Court of Israel to interpret *The Law of Moses*) can be explained in the following way. *The Torah* (*The Law*), “*Nomos*” in Greek, in its root meaning carries the implication of a “*rule*” or “*standard*.” In modern English it would mean “*the path*.” Jesus said, “*I am the resurrection and the life; he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live*” (John 11:25). *The purpose of The Scriptures* (including *The Torah*) is explained in John 5:39. They were to shadow or testify about Christ. So Christ is *The Path* (or the life) that *The Torah* (*The Law*) foreshadows.

*This Torah* is called *the path* because it leads you to Christ. *The Torah* reveals The Messiah and your need for Him. This is *The Law*, which comprises *The First Five Books*, and its *purpose*. *The Torah*, which is *spiritual, good, eternal* and *Holy*, leads you to Christ. In this account, God deals with *the seed of Abraham* (children) who were to receive *the promise*. Abraham’s children (Israel) turned out to be rebellious and did not want God to talk to them (directly). At this point, all God wanted was for them to keep His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts, so He *added nothing more*. They could have received *The New Covenant*, but they rejected it by sinning when they built the golden calf. At this point, Moses pleaded for their lives. God realized that the way to help them come to Him and The Messiah was by *The Added Law*, which God gave to Moses on Mount Sinai. *This added Law* became *The Law of Moses*, which included *The Ten Commandments* written in stone, *the judgments* and *the statutes*.

## Slavery Brings A Positive Result

This Law placed Israel into slavery (bondage) in order to bring them to Christ. Once *the temple* was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D., *this added Law of Moses* was ended. This is because Christ came and wrote God's *Ten Commandments* in your heart and mind. This was accomplished by a change in your very nature.

*The Law of Moses* was never intended for repentant people. John, The Baptist would not baptize The Pharisees and Sadducees because they would not repent or come to Christ. So, *The Added Law of Moses* was good, right and Holy because its purpose was to bring them to The Messiah. This Law is not required by true Christians because God writes His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts!

The Added Law is The Letter of *The Law*. Remember, all God wanted was for Israel to keep *The Ten Commandments* in their hearts, so He had *added nothing more* (Deuteronomy 5:22). However, *The Ten Commandments* were *added* to *The Law* because when Moses went up to The Mount, he also received *The Ten Commandments in stone*. *The Ten Commandments* were not written in The Israelites hearts, because they were hard-hearted and unrepentant. *The Torah (Law)* was what God told Moses to write in *The Book*. *This Book* was placed in the side of The Ark (Exodus 24:7). *This Book* or Law was for Israel.

As long as one's heart was like stone, God would not give mercy. *The Law* was only meant to bring a person to Christ (Hebrews 10:1) and it was placed in *the side of the ark*. This is *The Letter of The Law* or what was written in



***The Book or The Torah.*** The whole *Law* was written for Israel because they were unrepentant and hard-hearted. They were required to do much homework in order to finally be able to turn to Christ (I Timothy 1:9). God told Moses to write down what sin was, because they could not tell *right* from *wrong*. They did not have a right heart or God's nature to know the difference between good and evil (II Peter 1:4).

## Chapter 11

# THE SPIRIT VERSUS THE LETTER

Some Christians believe *The New Covenant* requires *The Law* to be kept only in The Spirit. Other Christians believe that one must keep *The Law* in The Letter and The Spirit. Still others believe a person must love others *only* and not keep any Law. Which is biblical?

That question can be answered when a person learns the basic difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. Once this question has been resolved on a *biblical basis*, then *The Truth of The Bible* becomes clear and obvious to all.

### The Old Covenant

Originally, the only thing that God required for *Salvation* was for Israel to keep His *Ten Commandments* in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:1-29). Then, Moses declared that God *added no more* (Deuteronomy 5:22). This fulfilled His requirement. There was nothing more to add. Jesus reinforced the same concept with the rich man in Matthew 19 when He showed that in order to have *Eternal Life*, one only needed to keep God's *Ten Commandments* in his heart. In God's *kingdom*, when *the saved* have a right to The Tree of Life, an individual must still keep God's *Ten Commandments* (Revelation 22:14). Therefore, you find that God *added The Law of Moses* to *The Ten Command-*

*ments* which became part of *the written Torah (The Law)*. *The Book of Galatians* declares that *this added law (Law of Moses)* was to last *only* until Christ came.

If one believed they were required to keep *The Letter of The Law of Moses*, then they were also to keep every part of *The Added Law of Moses*. If one part was transgressed, then a person became guilty of breaking the whole Law. Then, they came under the penalty or curse of *The Law*. Why did God *add The Law of Moses*? He *added The Law* because of transgressions (Acts 7:38-41). Since Israel did not have a converted heart, God spelled out (in great detail) what He wanted them to do. *The Law of Moses* was to put them into bondage (a form of slavery).

This religious slavery was to be such a burden that it would be like *a schoolmaster* who disciplines without remorse until one repents or seeks Christ (Galatians 3:24). *This added Law of Moses* was weak because human nature could not keep it in its entirety – no matter how hard they tried (Hebrews 8:6-10). God, lovingly, gave them *this schoolmaster (Law)* so they would repent in their hearts. God's *purpose* was to have *The Law* cause a change of heart. Jesus plainly said this was the job that Moses did (John 5:46). Moses was to bring The Israelites to Christ.

## Purpose Of The Old Covenant

*This covenant* was made for Israel. It was *not* the same as *the covenant* made with Abraham. Moses clearly states that *the covenant* made with the fathers (Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob) was different (Deuteronomy 5:3). Paul said that *the covenant* with the fathers was based on *a promise* and

*The Law of Moses* (added law) was introduced because of sin (Galatians 3:16-19). *These two covenants help interpret The Bible.* The Abrahamic Covenant was based on a *promise* because Abraham had been *faithful*. Therefore, it was counted to him as *righteousness*. What made Abraham *righteous* was his *faith* (Hebrews 11). Even though *The Law of Moses* was not in force for another 430 years (Galatians 3:17), Abraham kept *the whole Law* according to God. He was considered righteous because of his *faith* (Genesis 26:5). This is just like Christians today who have *agapè* (God's Law in their heart). They are described by The Apostle Paul as having fulfilled (completed) the entire Law (Romans 13:10). *This covenant made by God, through Moses, for Israel had an entirely different purpose.*

Galatians 3:19 clearly states how *this added Law of Moses* was given because Israel sinned and had an unrepentant heart (Deuteronomy 5:29). In fact, God wanted to kill them. However, Moses intervened and God instead gave them *The Law of Moses*, which was administered by Moses. This administration was known as *The Administration of The Letter*. Paul declares that *this covenant, including The Law of Moses and The Ten Commandments, was written on two tables of stone* (II Corinthians 3:3). Paul shows how this Law was written on stone (including judgments, ordinances, and statutes) to bring them to death, "*For the letter kills, but the spirit gives life*" (II Corinthians 3:6). Paul plainly states *the purpose of the added Law of Moses, was to bring Israel to death.* Why was this?

*The Law had many purposes. The Law told what righteousness was* (Philippians 3:6). It was also a shadow (picturing the future) of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). It was to

bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:24). You may not have been aware that God gave *The Law* to fulfill His *many purposes*. It was Holy, just and good because it was given to make a person realize they could not keep it all. Therefore, they were under its curse which was death (Galatians 3:10-11).

*The Law of Moses* was given to bring a person to repentance. Here, you have *The Old Covenant biblically interpreting itself*. Because Israel had a carnal heart and kept sinning, *The Old Covenant* was given to make them understand that they could not become righteous by their *own human effort*. That was the only reason God allowed Israel to live. God gave them *The Law* to force them to have a change of heart (Romans 5:20). Every time they sinned, *The Law of Moses* required an array of bondage (Greek, ergon – “works,” “drudgery” or “deeds”) to perform. Everything in *the added Law of Moses* was designed to show how unrepentant and incapable they were of keeping *The Law*. Every detail of their life was *spelled out* to show what was *right* and what was *wrong*.

Finally, *The Law of Moses* was to bring them to Christ through *true repentance* (Romans 5:20). This Law was truly *a schoolmaster* to bring them to Christ (Galatians 3:24). As long as they *performed* everything *The Law* required, they received the blessings of a long life in the land that God had given them. In addition, they also gained prosperity (Deuteronomy 5:33).

## Fault With The Law?

Many do not realize that *The Old Covenant* (Law of Moses)

*never promised Eternal Life. Eternal Life* came through *the promise* made to Abraham. Why didn't *The Law* give them *Eternal Life*? Paul said the fault was with them (Hebrews 8:8). Israel had the wrong nature because of their human flesh which is a carnal heart. To have *Eternal Life*, you must have *The Ten Commandments* written in your heart (Matthew 19:16-22).

An unconverted person, on his own, cannot decide *right* from *wrong*. Rebellious Israel had to have every aspect of human living spelled out in detail. That is why *The Law* covered every part of human existence. *The Law* tells you what sin is (I John 3:4). On their own, the people could not discern *good* from *evil*. The difference between The Gentiles (pagans) and Israel is that The Gentiles did not know God (Romans 1:28). They were helplessly left to their own ideas of *right* and *wrong*. The outcome has produced a variety of religions and *all of them are wrong*.

However, God spelled out right and wrong for The Israelites in detail. Then Moses wrote it in a book. Otherwise, there was no difference between The Gentiles and The Israelites. Both of them were unrepentant and carnal. Israel knew God's way, but The Gentiles had no clue. However, neither of them were able to be righteous. The Gentiles did not know the difference, and Israel had a wrong heart. In both cases, they sinned (Romans 3:23) and earned only death.

## Enter The New Covenant

Now, to examine a better way which is *The New Covenant*. Some *biblical* statements are so obvious but because of

previous belief, a person may ignore instruction in *The Scriptures* that is very plain and straightforward. A person will read a verse and if it doesn't agree with their understanding, they often read right over it as if it doesn't exist. Then, they become blind to *the truth*.

In Luke 5:36-39, Jesus gave the parable about putting new wine into old bottles (wineskins). It does not work because the bottles would burst. You must put new wine into new bottles (wineskins) because they will stretch as the wine ferments. Then, in Verse 39, Jesus made a *spiritual statement*. Christ said, "*No man also having drunk old wine straightway desires new: for he said, the old is better.*" This is a *significant spiritual lesson*. It depicts your understanding of human nature. The old ways always seem better than the new. Christ said that *new spiritual truths* are harder to accept and most human beings prefer to keep the old! Traditions eventually become perceived as *the so-called truth*.

Paul said *The Law* made nothing perfect (Hebrews 7:19). It only revealed sin. Then, Paul continued and said, "*But the bringing in of a better hope did.*" Plain, simple and clear – *The Old Covenant* could only tell you that you were a sinner. It could not change a person or make anyone *perfect*. In Verse 22, Paul said, "*By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.*" In Chapter 8 Verse 6, Jesus, as Melchizedek, "*obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is a mediator of a better covenant.*" This was established upon *better promises*. *This New Testament* changed *The Law* and its *administration* (Hebrews 7:12). *This New Covenant* was a *better way* to approach God because it could make a person *perfect*.

What happened to *The Old Covenant*? “*In that he said, a new covenant, he has made the first old, Now that which decays and waxes old is ready to vanish away*” (Hebrews 8:13). It ended in 70 A.D. with the fall of *the temple*. The teaching could not be any clearer. *The Covenant*, under the administration of Moses (*Law of Moses*), was to vanish away. That is simple and plain. Remember what Christ said. He revealed that men prefer the old wine or *The Old Covenant*. It is hard for humanity to give up old ideas. When a person thinks they know what is true and then understands *a new truth*, it is very difficult to give up those old beliefs.

## The Difference

To understand the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*, you must first understand that there is more than *one Law*. As you found in Chapter 10, ‘*What Is The Added Law?*’ there are *three Laws*. The first Law, *The Torah*, includes the entire *First Five Books of The Bible* and was written to disclose Christ as The Messiah (Hebrews 10:1). The two other laws, *The Torah* and The Oral Law, are also in *The Torah* or *The First Five Books of The Old Testament*. God added a Law to *The Torah* and *The Ten Commandments* for a different purpose than the rest of *The Torah* (Deuteronomy 5). *The Torah*, in Greek “*Nomas*,” was “*to reveal Christ as The Messiah and Savior of the world.*” *The added Law* had a specific limitation to it as well as a different purpose than the entire *Torah*. What was that difference?

*This added Law* was incorporated because of sin and it was only to *last* until Christ came (Galatians 3:19). This



Law was *a schoolmaster* that would bring a person to Jesus (Galatians 3:24). This Law *was added* for the benefit of unconverted people (I Timothy 1:9). *The Torah* showed the need for The Messiah and to restore paradise lost and The Tree of Life (Hebrews 10:1 and Matthew 18:11). *The added Law*, which is called *The Law of Moses* (commandments, statutes and ordinances), was to bring people to *repentance*. Later, it was supposed to cease or vanish (Galatians 3:23-25 and Hebrews 8:13). *This Law of Moses* will be re-instituted when Jesus *returns* (with *the temple*) to bring all *unrepentant* Israelites (and the *unrepentant* Gentiles) to Christ during The Millennium. Once everyone is repentant, *this Law will again cease* (Matthew 5:18).

From this point on, God's Law (*The Torah*) is written in your heart through "Christ – *In You*." Now, The Third Law is The Oral Law. Moses picks out a total of 70 from among *the elders* of Israel to be a Sanhedrin (court) (Exodus 18). They were to help him administer the smaller matters of *The Law*. This was because of its complexity and its large workload. Christ said this court existed in His day and they sat in Moses' seat (Matthew 23:1-3).

## Law Spelled Out

Remember, *The Law of Moses* spelled out what was *right* and what was *wrong* in God's eyes. The Israelites were *unrepentant* and, on their own, they could not discern *right* from *wrong*. God spelled out specifically what Israel was to do. The Gentiles came up with their own ideas regarding religion. When kept in its entirety, *The Law of Moses* was *their righteousness* (Deuteronomy 6:25). By keeping The Letter of *The Law of Moses*, you were ac-

ceptable to God. It allowed you to receive all the blessings in *the promised land* with a long life (Deuteronomy 6). However, keeping *The Law of Moses* by works or human effort only became *their righteousness* (by their own efforts) (Deuteronomy 6:25). It is the same problem that Job had until he repented *completely*. Remember, Job was the most righteous person during his time (Job 1:8).

Yet Job was not completely repentant until God brought him to that state of mind. Job finally realized that *only God can do everything* (Job 42:2). Job fully repented when he said, “*Wherefore I abhor myself and repent in dust and ashes*” (Job 42:6). The Apostle Paul learned the same lesson (Romans 7:13). Paul said that he kept *the righteousness in The Law* blamelessly (Philippians 3:6). Then, Paul said the knowledge of Christ was more excellent and counted his righteousness in *The Law* as useless (Philippians 3:8). Your righteousness, whether self-righteousness or otherwise, cannot please God (Romans 8:8).

Any attempt to be righteous in the flesh (by human works) *will not please God*. The best that your righteousness can do is give you a good life while on this earth. That is *The Old Covenant*. There is nothing else. *The Law of Moses* cannot make you righteous. No man can keep the whole Law or be justified (perfect and blameless). The intent of *The Law of Moses* is to make you realize that you are a sinner and need Christ (Galatians 3:24). God *added The Law of Moses* to *The Ten Commandments* because the people needed to come to repentance, just as Job did. Once that happened, a better way was needed. It was *a New Covenant* that does what *The Old Covenant* could not do, which was to give *Eternal Life*.

## The New Covenant

Paul told The Gentile Christians, “*Are you so foolish? Having begun in the Spirit, are you now made perfect by the flesh?*” (Galatians 3:3). The Gentiles who repented and accepted Christ received God’s Holy Spirit without keeping of *The Law of Moses*. Why do they, now, believe they must keep *The Works of The Law*? Paul said they were foolish if they did so. Why is this?

Christ makes it plain. At the well Jesus spoke to the woman from Samaria, saying “*But the hour comes, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship The Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeks such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth*” (John 4:23-24). God is not pleased when you worship Him in The Letter (by human effort). God said you must only worship Him in *The Spirit*. If you want to obey God, then you can only worship Him *spiritually*. Why is this?

Paul states that if you are “*In Christ,*” then you do not need to follow The Letter written in stone (*Ten Commandments*) but only *The Law* written in your fleshly heart (II Corinthians 3:3). God wants you to worship Him in *The Spirit*. If you worship Christ in The Letter, by your human efforts, it will bring you *death* and not *life*.

No human can keep the whole Law perfectly except Christ. By keeping *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses*, it will only bring you death. God warns you to worship Him in *The Spirit* because He wants you to have *Eternal Life*. No one can do anything by himself. Only God can change

you. Jesus said, “*But seek you first the kingdom of God and his righteousness and all these things shall be added to you*” (Matthew 6:33).

Christ plainly tells you that *righteousness* by *The Law of Moses* or any other way will not please God. It will *not save* you. The only way you can be *saved* is through His (God’s) *righteousness*. To achieve God’s *righteousness*, you must have “Christ – *In You*” which is given through God’s Holy Spirit (Colossians 1:27). Paul said the same thing (Romans 10:1-4). The difference between *The Letter* and *The Spirit* is like night and day. *The Spirit* is the process of God writing His Law (*Ten Commandments*) in your heart (Romans 2:14-15). *The Letter* is when you try to keep *The Law* by your own human effort. The Letter only kills. However, God’s Spirit “*In You*” gives you *life* by changing your nature. This is what God wanted from the beginning (Deuteronomy 5:29). He *added* nothing more.

You cannot keep *The Law of Moses* in *The Letter* and believe you will receive *life*. You can only receive *life* in *The Spirit* through *The New Covenant*. God is The One who writes His *Ten Commandments* in your heart which is His *righteousness* (Hebrews 10:16). This is *the biblical* difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. Paul said, “*Let us hold fast the profession [New Covenant] of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised)*” (Hebrews 10:23).

## The Law Is Spiritual

Here is the crux of the problem. *The Law (Torah)* has many parts. They are for different purposes and time pe-

riods. Most of *The Torah* (*First Five Books of The Bible*) covers history. Very little of *The Torah*, recorded in *The Bible*, states the various laws where God tells you what to do or not to do.

Much of *The Torah* is history. *The Added Law* was put into *The Torah* because Israel sinned. Most of *The Torah* (*The Law*) requires you to have *faith* and *trust* in God rather than listing numerous dos and don'ts. The Apostle Paul states that *The Law* (*Torah*) is *spiritual* (Romans 7:14). Since *The Law* is *spiritual*, it cannot die. It must be *kept spiritually* and not in *The Letter*. *The Law* (*Torah*) *cannot be done away!* This leads to a great misunderstanding.

Knowing what *The Torah* was meant to accomplish will clear up the entire misunderstanding. Paul said *The Law* is Holy and *The Commandments* are Holy, just and good. If kept *spiritually*, *The Law* is *eternal* and good. This includes *The Ten Commandments*. Now what was God's intent with this Law? The English translation of "*Torah*" is "*The Law*." This does not do justice to *The First Five Books*. In Hebrew, the word "*law*" is "*The Torah*." "*Torah*" has a greater meaning than the English word "*law*." "*Torah*" is a precept (statute) (Strong's #3384) that means "*to shoot or point out*" and "*to teach or inform*." The root comes from "*to shoot an arrow*." It also applies to "*the way or direction*." So, *The Law* (*Torah*) is really a precept that shows you *a way* (direction) to something.

Jesus said that He is *The Way*, *The Truth* and *The Life* (John 14:6). Jesus is the way to *life*. Christ said that He came to restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11). Believing in Jesus Christ is *The Work of God* (John 6:29). Therefore,

**“Christ – *In You*” is God’s work. Once *The Law* brings you to Christ and you keep it *spiritually* (a change of nature), then *The Law* is *eternally* “*In You*.”**

## What Was Lost

**When Adam and Eve were in The Garden of Eden or paradise, they lost their chance to eat from The Tree of Life (Eternal Life). When God expelled them, two cherubim were placed at the entrance so they could not return to take fruit from The Tree of Life.**

**Genesis 3:15 gives a great promise. It shows, from the beginning, from the seed of Adam and Eve, a Savior would come to restore what had been lost. Satan would eventually be defeated. Paul said that *The Law* (“*Nomos*” – *Torah*) was a shadow (prophecy) about The Messiah and how He would restore The Tree of Life and paradise (Hebrews 10:1-2). *The Torah*, therefore, shows *the way* that Christ, The Messiah, would come through the promise made to Abraham from the seed of Jacob. God changed Jacob’s name to “*Israel*.” Jacob’s twelve children became known as The Nation of Israel. These Israelites were led by Moses from Egypt to The Promised Land. They were unrepentant and rebellious. This attitude began right after the first time He spoke to them directly.**

**So, God had to give them *The Old Covenant*, which was not the same as *the promise* made to Abraham. This Covenant had *The Added Law* or *The Law of Moses*. This was because they kept *sinning*. *This Law of Moses* was added to *The Ten Commandments* and *The Torah*. However, this was only temporary – in order to bring them to Christ.**

*The Law of Moses* was used only when God was dealing with unrepentant or unconverted people. Once they repented, they came under *The New Covenant*, which gave them God's Holy Spirit. Then, they would have a new nature in their heart and be able to keep God's *Ten Commandments*.

This is *the simple biblical* difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*. *The Old Mosaic Covenant* brought you to Christ and then once repentant, *The New Covenant* would apply to Christians. All of *The Law (Torah)* is in force. *The Law of Moses* (still in force) applies but only to unconverted, unrepentant people. It was not for Christians. With *the temple* standing in The Millennium, *The Law* will, then, be *reinstated*. Once converted, you only worship God in *spirit* because God changes your heart through His Holy Spirit.

Your nature now tells you *right* from *wrong* because you are growing in God's love or *agàpè*. *The Old Covenant (Law of Moses)* is not needed even though it is in force for the unrepentant. It will be in force during The Millennium. Christ said that He did not come to destroy *The Law* but to fulfill it (Matthew 5:17-18). In fact, He said, "*one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.*" "*Ginomai*" means "*to cause to be*" (generate), "*be assembled*" and "*be brought to pass.*" This is the meaning of the word "*fulfill*" or "*be brought to pass.*" It all becomes simple and *biblically clear*.

## The Way To Christ

*The Torah* gives *the path* or *the way* to Christ. Christ came

to restore *life*. This compares with The Tree of Life and paradise. It relates to Adam and Eve and their children. In order to come to Christ, one needs to repent. When one doesn't repent, *The Law of Moses is added* (more homework from the *schoolmaster* until they get it right) to bring that person to Jesus. Once one is repentant, he/she no longer needs *The Law of Moses* to tell him what is *right* or *wrong*. *The New Covenant* writes God's Law (*Ten Commandments*) in your heart by changing your nature. Now, Christians come under a *higher standard* than *The Law of Moses*, which was written in *the letter* for those unrepentant people.

Jesus said in Matthew 5:20 "*a Christian must be more righteous than The Law of Moses demands in the letter*" (paraphrased). Since God places His love or agapè in your heart (*New Covenant*), you will keep *The Ten Commandments spiritually*. Hence, it will keep you from killing, coveting and idolizing. This is because you love God and your neighbor. This is a much higher level of *righteousness* than *The Law of Moses*. Never forget that, because of human nature, mankind can never keep *the whole Law of Moses*.

### Answer To Spirit And Letter

What is the answer to *the letter* and *the spirit*? It is simple! One cannot keep *the letter* and *the spirit*. *The letter* requires human effort, deeds and works. Since humans cannot keep *the entire Law of Moses*, mankind falls under the curse of *The Law* which is death. Keeping *The Law of Moses* by human effort denies Christ and your need for Him and The Holy Spirit. You can't have it both ways.



**You are either in *the letter* (unrepentant, without Christ) or "*In Christ*" (full of God's Holy Spirit). Jesus said that God only wants converted Christians who worship Him in Spirit (*The New Covenant*)! You cannot do both. You are either under *The Old Covenant* (the letter and unrepentant) or under *The New Covenant* (change of heart).**

**God gave Moses *The Law (Torah)* to give the history and the prophecies about The Messiah. Because of Israel's sin, God *added The Law of Moses* (dos and don'ts) with works and deeds to bring them to Christ. *This Law of Moses* acted as a *schoolmaster*.**

**The burden of administering *this added Law* required The 70 Elders (Sanhedrin) to help Moses. This became The Oral Law. This was *the five books* of *The Law* given to Moses. All of it was to bring a person to Jesus. From the beginning, God only wanted humanity to keep *The Ten Commandments* in their hearts, which was a change of nature (*agapè*). Consequently, God *added no more*.**

## Tale Of Two Houses

**Jesus plainly said that if you listen to His *sayings* then you are like a wise man (i.e. ten virgins) who built his house upon a rock (Christ) (Matthew 7:23-27). He also said that if you don't perform His *sayings*, then you are like a man who built his house on sand and the wind and rain destroyed that house. What are these two houses?**

**Paul said that Christians are partakers of a heavenly calling (Hebrews 3:1-6). What is your Christian calling? Paul said that Christ is The High Priest of everyone's heavenly**

calling and that Moses was faithful in his house. He then explained how Christ's *house* (the rock) had more *glory* than Moses' house.

In Hebrews 3:5, Moses tells the difference. The house which Moses built (*Old Covenant*) was only a *testimony* or a *witness* of things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2). *The Whole Law* (Hebrew, "*Torah*" and in Greek, "*Nomos*") was a *shadow* of things to come. Jesus said plainly that Moses spoke of Him (John 5:46). Everything in Moses' house was temporary – and not real. It was only a shadow of what was real (Christ, *the rock*). Read all of Hebrews 8. Everything that Moses built was just an example (shadow) of heavenly things. Notice how Moses' house was to cease and vanish away (Hebrews 8:13). This house was built on sand, did not stand and was destroyed by Titus in 70 A.D.

When *the temple* went down, *The Law* went, also. There was no way to keep *the whole Law* without *the temple*. The feast days and *The Law* was only a shadow of things to come (Colossians 2:16). *The Bible* plainly states how the whole Law (Hebrews 10:1-2) is only a shadow of Christ. Colossians 2:17 states that the body is of Christ. It is not *The Law* or *The Holy Days* because they are not real. They are the house that was destroyed (Hebrews 8:13). Now, what is the real house?

## The Real House

*"But Christ* [the rock] *as a son over his own house; whose house are we* [those who listen and do Christ's sayings] *if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end"* (Hebrews 3:6). Christians do not need *The*

**Law to tell them *right* from *wrong* because Christians have “Christ – *In Them*” (Colossians 1:27). The entire subject of *The Book of Colossians* is your *righteousness* through “Christ – *In You*” – which is God’s *righteousness* – rather than *the righteousness* of *The Law*, which you could not keep (Deuteronomy 6:25 and James 2:10). Instead, *Christ is building His house “In You.”* You are His *temple* and His *house*. That is why you are to *witness* “Christ – *In You*” which is His *house*. This is the tale of the two houses.**

**Moses’ *house* (*The Old Covenant* and *Law*) was only a *shadow* (not real) to bring you to Christ (Galatians 3:19-25). After *faith* came, you were no longer under *the schoolmaster*. *The Law* was temporary and not the real thing. Therefore, it ended in 70 A.D. *This house* of *The Old Covenant* will not be restored until The Millennium when *unrepentant* Israelites and Gentiles will have their chance to repent and come to Christ. They will be required to *observe The Holy Days*.**

## **The Household Of Christ**

**Christians who have “Christ – *In Them*” are part of The Household of God. Christ’s household keeps *the holy days* by *fulfilling what* they foreshadowed. You, as Christ’s *house*, are *the real thing*. Christ is your Passover (sacrificed lamb). Christ has *made you unleavened* (i.e. unleavened bread). He has given you God’s Holy Spirit (Pentecost), and therefore, Christ has made *atonement* for you (represented by The Day of Atonement – Yom Kippur).**

***The unconverted* must come to Christ and then live that shadow (observe *The Law*) during The Millennium. This**

begins with Christ's *return*. Christians, who are His *House* and His *Bride*, will help bring *the unconverted* to Christ! Now consider this. A believer in Christ, who thinks he/she must keep *The Law* (*The Torah*) along with *the dos* and *don'ts* of Moses' Administration, does not understand the difference between *The Old* and *New Covenants*.

*The Law*, written in the letter, tells you the difference between *right* and *wrong*. This defines sin (I John 3:4). If one believes they need to keep this Law, then they have *nothing to do* with *The New Covenant*. No human can keep *The Law* by human effort. Only Christ did that. That is the reason for *The New Covenant*. *A new heart* was needed. Since *The Law* is *spiritual* (Romans 7:14), it must be kept *spiritually*. Christians must obey a *higher Law* which is *The Law of Christ*. When you have God's Holy Spirit, *the spirit* teaches you *right* from *wrong* by changing your heart. God writes His *Ten Commandments* in your heart. You know *right* from *wrong* by a change of heart and do not need *any written Law* to tell you. *The Law* becomes *eternal* (spiritual) (I John 2:19-21, 27).

### A Higher Definition

Christians live according to a *higher definition* of sin, just as has been written in I John 5:17, which states, "*All unrighteousness is sin.*" In *The New Covenant*, when you desire someone else's goods, you are guilty of coveting. When you hate your brother, you are guilty of murder.

You see a *much higher standard* than that provided by *the written Law*. Therefore, you cannot be in *the spirit* (God's Law written in your heart) and in *the letter* at the

same time. *The letter* only requires a person not to sin physically. *True Christians* are those who know *right* from *wrong* because of their nature and heart. Therefore, they fulfill (complete) *The Law* by expressing love (Romans 13:10). There is one other difference concerning true believers. The word “*love*” in English is very misleading. There are those who believe Christianity is based on emotion or love. They say there is no need for God’s Law (*Ten Commandments*) because just loving God and their neighbor is sufficient. They believe Christianity is *a feeling* and many times associate it with *uncontrolled passion*.

God’s love (*agàpè*) is totally different. God has emotion and feelings, but this is based upon *righteousness*. When the rich man said he kept *the commandments* from his youth up, Christ said that Jesus *loved* (*agàpè*) him (Matthew 19). *Agàpè*, God’s love, is based upon morality and righteousness. God’s love is based upon *The Ten Commandments* being in your heart (I Timothy 1:5).

Christians, as true followers of Christ, *do not need to observe the written Law* (*The Torah*) when they keep *The Ten Commandments*. This is because they are on a higher level through a change of heart (which is love). At the same time, true Christians do not merely follow Christ through their feelings or emotions and keep on sinning. Rather, they have *a heart of love* that keeps them *from sinning*.

This is *The New Covenant*, which is more glorious and better than *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses*. *The New Covenant* is “*Christ – In You*” (Colossians 1:27). *You are One with God as He reproduces “Himself – In You” and you become His Sons*.

## Chapter 12

### SATAN – GOD’S HELPER

Why is there a Lake of Fire? What is its purpose? In short, why would a loving God create a Lake of Fire? You need to understand why God placed a Lake of Fire in His plan. Is there a better way to give the faithful Eternal Life while the unconverted burn in The Lake of Fire? To understand this you must first experience how God thinks.

Why did God choose to do things this way? That is a broad question. Since God is perfect, good, righteous, merciful and full of love, couldn't He have found a better way to accomplish His *plan*? Why use Satan? Why would God need a devil to carry out His *plan*? You need to look at The Mind of God and how He *thinks*. Only then, will you begin to understand why Satan plays such an integral part in God's perfect *plan*.

Philippians 2:1-5 <sup>1</sup>If *there be* therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any fellowship of the Spirit, if any bowels and mercies, <sup>2</sup>Fulfil you my joy, that you be like-minded, having the same love, *being* of one accord, of one mind. <sup>3</sup>Let nothing *be done* through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. <sup>4</sup>Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. <sup>5</sup>Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus.

Paul describes feelings that are *so deep* they become part of *the body* and *spirit*. To fulfill this joy, one must become like Paul's description of a Christian (Philippians 2).

As a Christian, how should one behave? To start with, don't be so concerned with yourself. Christ was never self-centered. He always thought about others. Christ has a mind that thinks only about the welfare of God's *creation*.

Hebrews 1:3 Who being the brightness of his glory and the express image of his person and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high.

## Image Of Character

Christ looks exactly like The Father. The word for "*image*" in Greek is "*charakter*" or "*character*." God, The Father, only thinks about the good that can be done for others. So, understand that Christ is just like The Father.

Psalms 40:1-5 <sup>1</sup>I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. <sup>2</sup>He brought me up also out of an horrible pit, out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock and established my goings. <sup>3</sup>And he has put a new song in my mouth, even praise to our God: many shall see it and fear and shall trust in the LORD. <sup>4</sup>Blessed is that man that makes the LORD his trust and respects not the proud, nor such as turn aside to lies. <sup>5</sup>Many, O LORD my God, are your wonderful works which you have done and your thoughts which

are to us-ward: they cannot be reckoned up in order to you: if I would declare and speak of them, they are more than can be numbered.

Here is an algebraic equation regarding God’s character. Instead of using  $A + B$ , or  $A + X = B$ , use righteousness + love + character + goodness + perfection = GOD’S MIND. David talked about how God thinks. David said, “*I waited patiently for the LORD; and he inclined to me and heard my cry. He brought me up also out of a horrible pit [Lake of Fire], out of the miry clay and set my feet upon a rock [which was Christ] and established my goings.*” Christ made a way. It is established, firm and safe. These are His wonderful works and His plan.

When God created His *Plan for Salvation* (to reproduce Himself), His intent was to *save everyone*. So, The Lake of Fire was designed to purify sinners. The only choice one has is to repent! In some cases, it will only take a short period of time. But, for the stubborn ones, it may take longer. Don’t be concerned because God gives everyone all the time they need to repent.

I Corinthians 13:6-9 <sup>6</sup>Rejoice not in iniquity, but rejoice in the truth; <sup>7</sup>Bear all things, believe all things, hope all things, endure all things. <sup>8</sup>Charity never fails: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away. <sup>9</sup>For we know in part and we prophesy in part.

One of God’s traits is love or *agàpè*. “*Charity [agàpè love] never fails.*” Agàpè love is always there. You can always



depend upon it. It is like a rock. This is because, “*we know in part and we prophesy in part.*”

I Corinthians 13:5 [Charity] Does not behave itself unseemly, seek not her own, is not easily provoked, think no evil.

## How Love Behaves

Love does not behave indecently. This is because “*God is love*” (I John 4:8). God is *agàpè*. It is wonderful to know this God who has free choice has everything, never needs anything. He always was, is today and always will be. God wants to share His love with His *creation*. He can do whatever He wants. This is because He is *love (agàpè)* and He is *righteous* by His very nature. The largest sacrifice that God could give is Himself. Yet, God created a problem for Himself. It is summed up by the question, “*How do you clone yourself?*” Atheists ask if there is a God. They wonder why He allows humans to endure a lifetime of imperfections and problems. Why didn't He make you perfect in the beginning? You read, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48). If God made everyone perfect in the beginning, He would *not* have needed to bring forth a reproduction (a Son). Rather, God would have created a robot. When God decided to reproduce Himself, He created an incredibly difficult job for Himself. He had to make the reproduction of Himself come directly from Himself. The entire puzzle of *The Bible* is about becoming *One with God*.

James 1:25 But whoso looks into the perfect law of

liberty and continues therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed.

The *sacrifice* that Jesus Christ made was tremendous. This is because a man can have no greater love than to lay down His *life* for his friends. God sacrificed Himself for your good. That is *The Plan* and He designed it to accomplish *His Purpose*. James talks about a *Royal Law*. A Royal Law is a *Kingly Law* or a Law from God.

James 2:8 If you fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, You shall love your neighbour as yourself, you do well.

## The Royal Law

The Royal Law of God gives you liberty and true freedom (not bondage or slavery). God’s *plan* was to give His *creation Eternal Life*. His creation was not placed into bondage or slavery. Individuals must have total free choice. Since God is reproducing Himself, these beings are required to have unlimited free choice. This is because anything less would not be from God.

Now, it seems that God created another problem for Himself. If He created human beings with total free choice to decide what is right and wrong and they had *Eternal Life*, then what would be the result? Would it be confusion? Everyone would have a different way of doing things. Yet God’s creation had to be free to choose (within a limited time frame) before embracing *Eternal Life*. There was no other way. Remember, God made man in His own image.

However, God did not give man *the perfection* that He has. Therefore, God could not allow mankind to live forever after they made the choice to sin. God couldn't make you perfect in the beginning because there was no guarantee that you would choose to be sinless.

If everyone did what was *right*, but only according to each individual, earthly societies would end up in mayhem. It would be another Sodom and Gomorrah. So God created *a more perfect plan* where everyone would ultimately become perfect by their own choice.

John 14:5-6 <sup>5</sup>Thomas said to him, Lord, we know not whither you go; and how can we know the way? <sup>6</sup>Jesus said to him, I am the way, the truth and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me.

Jesus Christ is talking just before He left earth to be with The Father. This is just before His crucifixion. Jesus was leaving instructions to The Apostles along with some interesting thoughts.

## Doubting Thomas

There is an account of a doubting Thomas (John 14). What is the meaning of this story? It shows you that God has a system. Satan also has a system. Satan wants you to follow *his way*. This is a totally different system, living carnally. And Satan's system will lead you into pain and misery. God's system is designed to train you to become *righteous, merciful, loving and perfect*. This guarantees you *Life Everlasting!* Christ said, "*I am the way, the truth and the life*" (John 14:6). Christ tells you the truth of God

(Hebrews 1). **Only He knows the true facts. He is *the light*, which will give you *life*. However, humanity always wants to do things another way. These are two completely opposing systems. Read the proof about *the whole plan of God* (Psalm 40).**

Ephesians 3:14-15 <sup>14</sup>For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>15</sup>Of whom the whole family in heaven and earth is named.

Understand that *the purpose* of human life is for you to become *a Son of God*. God is reproducing Himself through a family. Hence, there must be a father, a mother and children. If God wants to give His children everything, then it means that they will receive *an inheritance*. Through *an inheritance*, God is passing on everything that He is (and all that He has) to His children. Everything He possesses (including *eternal life*) is contained in Him. This is what The Sabbath represents. He portrays everything that is good and plentiful (complete blessings). There is no pain, suffering, debt or death.

## Children And Inheritance

Children don’t always understand what *an inheritance* is. It is *a right*, but it is only *a right* because the giver has decided to make it *a right*. Mankind does not respect *The Law of Inheritance*. The Government wants to tax it. The Government’s intent is to make everything and everyone equal. God doesn’t want to make everything equal. He wants to decide what each individual in His family will receive according to their *spiritual growth*. He tells you that His first begotten Son, Jesus Christ, receives everything

and then the remainder of the children will receive their *individual inheritance* according to their good works.

God could not have created *a better Plan of Salvation*. Indeed, God wants to give *an inheritance* to His heirs. Mankind and the government want to steal most of the *inheritance* or, worse yet, dissipate it. Does God give *that inheritance*? Christ said that He is *The Way* and *The Truth*. *He wants to give you life* (John 14). Anything outside of that system is wrong. God made *a promise* to Abraham and He passed all those blessings on to *the seed* of Abraham. The children of Israel were to receive *the inheritance*, but they were rebellious. So instead, God gave them *a Law*. He had to give them *a Law* because they were *unconverted*. *The Law of God* was given to Moses so that The Children of Israel would realize they were carnal. *The Law* did not make them *righteous* like God. God has made it all so clear, yet Christians argue whether they should keep *The Law* or not. Carnal individuals are sinners who *do whatever they want*. *The Law* was instituted so they could realize they were sinners. *The Law* was intended to bring them to Christ so they could repent (Galatians 3:24). God never loses and never makes mistakes. In the end, He will win and you will eventually get Eternal Life.

## God's Plan

God had to devise *a plan* so that His creation would never get lost. God is *perfect* and He carries out what He *wills* (Ephesians 1:10-11). He always succeeds! So God came up with a system whereby no one can be lost. God does not abort. He will bring every human life to *Salvation!* That was why Christ came to this earth (I John 4:14).

Matthew 13:36-38 <sup>36</sup>Then Jesus sent the multitude away and went into the house: and his disciples came to him, saying, Declare to us the parable of the tares of the field. <sup>37</sup>He answered and said to them, He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup>The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one.

God’s system guarantees *Salvation* for everyone. This will be accomplished through His Son, Jesus Christ. *This plan* will come to a successful conclusion (John 6:29). If you do not understand how God thinks, then you cannot understand the following statement from Matthew 13, “<sup>36</sup>*Then Jesus sent the multitude away.*” This was for a very good reason.

Remember that John 14:6 says, “*I am the way.*” In that same context, you read, “<sup>37</sup>*He that sows the good seed is the Son of man; <sup>38</sup>The field is the world [God’s Plan of Salvation] the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares [weeds thrown into this field] are the children of the wicked one.*” Satan bears children just like God bears children.

In a contest between God and Satan, who would win? On one side, you find that Satan is developing his children. On the other side, God is developing His children. Do you remember the story of the tortoise and the hare? You will find that God and His children are like the turtle and the children of Satan are like the hare.

Galatians 4:19-27 <sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Christ be formed in you. <sup>20</sup>I desire

to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you. <sup>21</sup>Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do you not hear the law? <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the freewoman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is Mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. <sup>27</sup>For it is written, Rejoice, you barren that bears not; break forth and cry, you that travails not: for the desolate has many more children than she which has a husband.

The Apostle Paul explained that if anyone preached *another gospel* (reread Chapter 7, 'The True Gospel'), then *The Law of Moses* could never save mankind.

*“<sup>19</sup>My little children, of whom I travail in birth [talking about a family with children] again until Christ be formed in you. [God's purpose is to reproduce “Himself – In You”]. <sup>20</sup>I desire to be present with you now and to change my voice; for I stand in doubt of you”* (Galatians 4:19-20).

## Bond And Free

Paul continues, *“<sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh.”* The bondwoman, also, produced children. This

was done after the flesh. Sarah was childless, so she convinced her husband Abraham to have children through the bondwoman.

This is *free choice*, which ended in sorrow for everyone. Sarah told Abraham to take her handmaid Hagar and produce a baby. There are two types of marriages.

- 1) In God’s marriage, through bone of bone and flesh of flesh, you become *one*. What God has joined together, let no One put asunder (you become *One* with God).
  
- 2) The other type of marriage is Satanic. It was allowed in *The Law of Moses*. It was according to the teaching of Baal. This Baal was *the god of fertility* or the lord who owned the virgins among the women and who considered them property. So that was the choice which Eve made when she took from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. She incurred all the penalties of Satan’s system.

Satan does not believe in marriage the way God does. Satan views women as property. Abraham was not sinning when he took Hagar because Hagar was his property. This was allowed in *The Law of Moses*. Sarah thought this was the only solution. Later it caused Abraham a great deal of grief. Paul explains this scenario, “<sup>24</sup>*Which things are an allegory for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, [speaking of The Law of Moses] which genders to bondage, which is by Agar.*” *The Law of Moses* had to be given to *unconverted* people (I Timothy 1:9-10).



## Mount Sinai

*The Law never made anyone righteous or perfect. The Law of Moses only informs sinners that they are sinning. “<sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.”* Christ is the sower of the seed (the children of God) as opposed to the tares (the children of Satan). Hagar and Ishmael were cast out because they *could not* be part of *the inheritance*. Remember, God is reproducing Himself through The Principle of Inheritance. The desolate were plainly told that they, “*have many more children than she which has a husband.*” Hagar was not properly married to Abraham. Sarah was married to Abraham. They were *bone of bone* and *flesh of flesh* and no one was to tear them apart. That is quite plain and simple. Satan knows his system is going to produce more children in the short-term than God's system. However, short-term gain is *long-term loss*. Satan does not require marriage. He promotes the concept of just living together. You can have one-night stands and produce as many children as you want. God says, “*For many are called, but few are chosen*” (Matthew 22:14). So, they end up going into The Lake of Fire.

Ezekiel 28:1-2 <sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, say to the prince of Tyrus, Thus said the Lord God; Because your heart is lifted up and you have said, I am a God, I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas; yet you are a man and not God, though you set your heart as the heart of God.

How did Satan come up with this plan? Ezekiel 28 tells the story about The Prince of Tyre who ruled over The Island of Tyre (history books call it Phoenicia).

## Phonecia

Phonecia was a merchant giant. Archaeologically, people are discovering Phoenician writings in far away places such as The United States and South America. This trading giant was perhaps the first form of globalization. The Prince of Tyre was full of pride. He was a tycoon. His ships were sailing and trading all over the world. This is about the time of Solomon and David. This prince was using Satan’s system to gain wealth. Satan may have been directing him, influencing him and literally possessing his very being. *“<sup>1</sup>The word of the LORD came again to me, saying, <sup>2</sup>Son of man, say to the prince of Tyrus, Thus said the Lord God; Because your heart is lifted up.”* This shows that the heart of proud men may become highly exalted. Yet God, *the most powerful being* in existence, has a humble heart. Although it is difficult to think of God as being humble, He is. He never thinks of Himself. He is not worried about self-esteem. Why should He? His thoughts are always about doing what is good. He is *the perfect example*. David was the same way. David was a sinner because he did things that were terribly wrong. He murdered, committed adultery and did many other sinful things. But, he always repented and his heart was humble. God said that David had a heart like His own.

## Prince Of Tyre

On the other hand, The Prince of Tyre was completely dif-

ferent. God said, “*2Because your heart is lifted up and you have said, I am a God* [referring not only to The Prince of Tyre, but to Satan, also] *I sit in the seat of God, in the midst of the seas.*” This is Satan’s world. Satan never doubts that God is God. Satan *knows* God is The True God. Satan never even thought of being God himself. Satan just wanted to be *like God*.

Ezekiel 28:11-13 <sup>11</sup>Moreover the word of the LORD came to me, saying, <sup>12</sup>Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus and say to him, Thus said the LORD God; You seal up the sum, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup>You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created.

These texts are not talking about a man. Notice the words, “<sup>13</sup>*You have been in Eden the garden of God.*” When we think of Satan in The Garden, we imagine a snake wrapped around the tree with its head exposed. However, that is not what Eve saw. Here is what she saw, “*You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold.*”

This is what Satan really looked like. Amazing isn’t it? He was like a serpent. Although Satan was deceptive, he was good looking and sure of himself, much like today’s

con men. “*And the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created.*”

## Tool To Deceive

God intentionally made *The Bible* into a puzzle. He purposely wanted people to understand *The Bible* and be converted at different times (when they are ready). All people are not destined to know *the truth* at the same time. So, Satan was God’s *tool* to deceive God’s creation. God gave Satan that authority.

John 8:43-47 <sup>43</sup>Why do you not understand my speech? Even because you cannot hear my word. <sup>44</sup>You are of your father the devil and the lusts of your father you will do. He was a murderer from the beginning and abode not in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own: for he is a liar and the father of it. <sup>45</sup>And because I tell you the truth, you believe me not. <sup>46</sup>Which of you convinced me of sin? And if I say the truth, why do you not believe me? <sup>47</sup>He that is of God heareth God’s words: you therefore hear them not, because you are not of God.

When talking to The Pharisees and Sadducees, Jesus Christ said that they were of their father, The Devil. This is quite clear. They are *The Diabolos*. Satan’s children are liars. If all humanity understood God’s *truth* at the same time, they would feel guilty. They would feel responsible for what they do. They would know they are sinning. As long as Satan deceives, these people are misled and think

they are doing okay. It is very hard to help anyone who is doing something very wrong. It is tough for people to admit they are wrong. Not many can be like the person in *the temple* who said, “*God forgive me. I am a sinner.*”

### God Uses Satan

God *uses* Satan to help *fulfill* His plan. When Satan rebelled and was tossed to earth, he became God's tool. Remember, God says, “*I create evil*” (Isaiah 45:7). However, God cannot *be* evil. God cannot sin. If He sinned, He would not be God. God could not have been *The One* to keep anyone from understanding Him.

Your Savior not only had to give His life for you, but He, also, had to be able to *judge righteously*. He never could have judged *righteously* if He was a violator of *The Law*. Remember, when The Pharisees and The Levites brought an adulteress to Jesus, according to *The Law of Moses*, she had to be stoned. It states that Christ may have written their sins in the sand. The original scriptures do not have this scenario. No one knows. When they all left, Christ said, “*Neither do I condemn you.*” They really had no right to condemn her because they, themselves, were sinners.

Why doesn't God do the judging? Until you have walked in the person's shoes, you cannot judge them. Did you ever hear of being *judged* by twelve of your own peers? Hebrews states, “*Christ was tempted in every way like as we, yet without sin.*”

God couldn't judge you because He never sinned. God

never experienced carnal nature. So, He sent His Son to become a human being. He was required to live sinlessly as a human being, so He could be *a righteous judge*. This demonstrates again what *a perfect plan* God created. No one but God could have created anything like it.

Ezekiel 28:14-16 <sup>12</sup>Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the king of Tyrus and say to him, Thus said the Lord God; You seal up the sum, full of wisdom and perfect in beauty. <sup>13</sup>You have been in Eden the garden of God; every precious stone was your covering, the sardius, topaz and the diamond, the beryl, the onyx and the jasper, the sapphire, the emerald and the carbuncle and gold: the workmanship of your tabrets and of your pipes was prepared in you in the day that you were created. <sup>14</sup>You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I have set you so: you were upon the holy mountain of God; you have walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire. <sup>15</sup>You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity was found in you. <sup>16</sup>By the multitude of your merchandise they have filled the midst of you with violence and you have sinned: therefore I will cast you as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.

## What God Needed

God used someone who could be a liar and without feelings or sympathy for what human beings endure. God needed someone who was good-looking, pompous and had a huge ego.

Satan was, “<sup>12</sup>*full of wisdom and perfect in beauty.* <sup>14</sup>*You are the anointed cherub that covers.*” Satan was one of three cherubs (Michael, Gabriel and Heylel).

The word “*Lucifer*” is not in *The Bible*. A Catholic, named Saint Jerome (345-420 A.D.) translated “*Heylel*” into “*Lucifer*.” The Hebrew “*Heylel*” means “*one who proclaims.*” Satan knew the whole story. He knew God’s whole plan. However he didn’t like it. In this context, you read, “<sup>14</sup>*You are the anointed cherub that covers; and I have set you so; you were upon the holy mountain of God; you have walked up and down in the midst of the stones of fire.* <sup>15</sup>*You were perfect in your ways from the day that you were created, till iniquity was found in you.*” How did all this happen? It was by, “<sup>16</sup>*the multitude of thy merchandise.*” This brings you back to The Prince of Tyre.

God said that “*I will cast you as profane out of the mountain of God: and I will destroy you, O covering cherub, from the midst of the stones of fire.*” Christians say that Satan is going into the fire. It is obvious he will get thrown into The Lake of Fire. All this will become clear later.

Genesis 3:1-7 <sup>1</sup>Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman, Yea, has God said, You shall not eat of every tree of the garden? <sup>2</sup>And the woman said to the serpent. We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: <sup>3</sup>But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die. <sup>4</sup>And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not surely die: <sup>5</sup>For God does know that in the day you eat

thereof, then your eyes shall be opened and you shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. <sup>6</sup>And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together and made themselves aprons.

Satan was in The Garden of Eden but he was not like a snake slithering around. He was this awesome cherub, beautiful with the aura of glistening jewels. He acted like a deceptive snake and he may have frightened Adam.

### Satan’s Great Deception

Satan tells Eve what he thinks and believes, “<sup>4</sup>*And the serpent said to the woman, You shall not surely die.*” Satan was correct in this assessment but he was deceptive at the same time. He didn’t tell Eve that she would die once (perhaps twice) between then and the time of receiving *Salvation*. Satan is tricky. His system is directly opposite from God’s system of honesty, “<sup>5</sup>*For God does know that in the day you eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened.*”

Most Christians think that Satan lied to Eve, but he did not. She ate and gave the fruit to her husband. He ate it with her and they hid themselves from God by trying to clothe themselves. Now, for the first time, they understood about sex and passion. When they ate the fruit, they knew they were naked. Clearly, Satan told her *the truth* long before she was ready to handle it. Satan never tells



the whole truth but just enough to suit *his purpose*. “<sup>6</sup>*And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food and that it was pleasant to the eyes and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof and did eat and gave also to her husband with her; and he did eat. <sup>7</sup>And the eyes of them both were opened.*”

So the message was the truth, but it was very deceptive. Remember that the best liars are those who believe their own lies. Realize that Adam always talked directly to the angel of God. But he also listened to his wife. This was a stupid decision. Hence, they received the penalty for their disobedience.

### Adam Lost The Easy Life

Adam lost an easy life. He became responsible for Eve, who became his property. Initially, it was hard for Adam to refuse her. How can you refuse your own flesh? Because he disobeyed, Adam lost *Eternal Life*. Eve became his property and he ruled over her. She entered Satan's system. She gave herself to Satan. Adam and Eve became Satan's instruments and they were worshipping Baal.

Jeremiah 7:1-7 <sup>1</sup>The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, <sup>2</sup>Stand in the gate of the LORD's house and proclaim there this word and say, Hear the word of the LORD, all you of Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the LORD. <sup>3</sup>Thus said the LORD of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings and I will cause you to dwell in this place. <sup>4</sup>Trust you not in lying words, saying, The temple of the LORD, The temple of the LORD, The temple of

the LORD, are these. <sup>5</sup>For if you thoroughly amend your ways and your doings; if you thoroughly execute judgment between a man and his neighbour; <sup>6</sup>If you oppress not the stranger, the fatherless and the widow and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt: <sup>7</sup>Then will I cause you to dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers, for ever and ever.

When you study The Aztecs, you learn that they practiced *the shedding of innocent blood* by burning their children as a sacrifice to their pagan god, Moleck. The account above is about Judah (The Jews), one of The Tribes of Israel. In the story, Judah goes and worships in God’s temple. God says, “*4Trust you not in lying words.*” What were they following? They were seeking protection in *the temple*. They were calling out for deliverance.

Jeremiah 7: 17-18 <sup>17</sup>See you not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? <sup>18</sup>The children gather wood and the fathers kindle the fire and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven and to pour out drink offerings to other gods, that they may provoke me to anger.

### Stealing From God’s Temple

They were coming to God’s temple and stealing, “*See you do not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood and the fathers kindle the fire and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven.*” This is the tradition of Ashtar (Easter) in Babylon. This proclamation says that

**this woman would never be a widow. Yet, these *drink offerings* made God angry.**

**Jeremiah 7:20** Therefore thus said the Lord God; Behold mine anger and my fury shall be poured out on this place, on man and on beast and on the trees of the field and on the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn and shall not be quenched.

**Jeremiah 7:29-32** <sup>29</sup>Cut off your hair, O Jerusalem and cast it away and take up a lamentation on high places; for the LORD has rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath. <sup>30</sup>For the children of Judah, have done evil in my sight, said the LORD: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. <sup>31</sup>And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it to my heart. <sup>32</sup>Therefore, behold, the days come, said the LORD, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place.

**Notice how the anger, fury and fire are all related to God's attitude regarding this ruinous conduct, "*it shall burn and shall not be quenched* [The Lake of Fire]. <sup>29</sup>*Cut off your hair, O Jerusalem.*"**

**When a woman became a harlot, she lost her covering (her hair). Hair signifies the angels protecting the woman. What were they doing to offend in *the temple*?**

The answer is, “<sup>31</sup>*And they have built the high places in Tophet [Tophet is a village where they did their cremations], in the valley of the son of Hinnom [The Hebrew word “Hinnom” is “Gehenna” in Greek and relates to “The Lake of Fire”], to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart.* <sup>32</sup>*Therefore, behold, the days come said the LORD, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter.*” They were killing infants.

### Children Offered To Baal

They were offering their children as a sacrifice to the god Baal. Why would Satan want beautiful little children to be burned? It is because Satan knows that he will, also, be burned. Repentance requires one to become like a little child.

So, through pagan religions all over the world, Satan convinced people to throw their own flesh and blood (their own children) into the fire. Satan convinced them that this would appease their pagan gods. Satan knew he was supposed to be like a little child, but he never changed his attitude. If the followers of Satan had obeyed *the true God* and became like little children (and repented), then God would have *saved* them.

Matthew 8:28-29 <sup>28</sup>And when he was come to the other side into the country of the Gergesenes, there met him two possessed with devils, coming out of the tombs, exceeding fierce, so that no man might pass by that way. <sup>29</sup>And, behold they cried out, saying, What have

we to do with you, Jesus, you Son of God? Are you come hither to torment us before the time?

These demons knew what awaited them, “<sup>29</sup>*And, behold, they cried out, saying, what have we to do with you, Jesus, you Son of God? Are you come hither to torment us before the time?*”

Satan knows he will be going into The Lake of Fire. He and one-third of the angels who rebelled and became demons know that they will be going into The Lake of Fire.

### Chains Of Darkness

Christ said, “*They are cast with chains in darkness, all in torment, constantly, fearing the Lake of Fire.*” So, these demons seek refuge in humans, who have given themselves over to Satan. Humans can be *saved* from The Fire, but only through Christ. When Christ cast the demons out of the raving, ranting, possessed person, the demons said, “*Cast us into the pigs. It's better to be in the pigs, than to roam around, in stress and torment.*” There is a time when Satan comes before God. God asked Satan if he had ever seen a man as upright and perfect as Job. Job was a man who hated evil so deeply. Satan's answer was that Job obeyed God and listened to Him because God had blessed Job's life. With Satan's remark, God used Satan to prove a point (Job 1). Remember that God asked Satan the question. God knew He had to use Satan. God creates evil, but does not perpetrate it. A proud, ego-driven angel fought against God. The angel lost and the earth was given as his kingdom to deceive as many as he could. This angel became Satan. God knew the inner workings

of Satan’s mind so God will use him to eventually *save everyone*.

Isaiah 14:4 That you shall take up this proverb against the king of Babylon and say, How has the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased!

Satan works by trafficking merchandise (Ezekiel 48). This is globalization. It is not by *inheritance* as God intended. Rather, it strives to obtain as much economic control as possible over the whole world. You can clearly see the form of government that Satan believes in. So you must separate the two: 1) Ezekiel 28 has to do with economics and 2) Isaiah 14 concerns government.

### God’s Way Versus Satan’s Way

God’s way is for you to become *One* with God. Satan’s way is just a form of possession. Satan’s form of government is a dictatorship. Satan promotes the attitude of not giving and not loving – just taking. That is the difference between Satan’s way and God’s way, “*That you shall take up this proverb against the king of Babylon and say, How has the oppressor ceased! The golden city ceased.*”

Isaiah 14: 10-12 <sup>10</sup>All they shall speak and say to you, Are you also become weak as we? Are you become like to us? <sup>11</sup>Your pomp is brought down to the grave and the noise of your viols: the worm is spread under you and the worms cover you. <sup>12</sup>How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations!

**Whose pomp is this? Remember that Nebuchadnezzar (Babylon) had to wander around as a wild man for seven years. This lasted until Nebuchadnezzar learned there was a God in heaven who ruled the affairs of man. “<sup>11</sup>*The noise of your viols [harps] the worm is spread under you [this is The Lake of Fire] and the worms cover you. <sup>12</sup>How are you fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! How are you cut down to the ground, which did weaken the nations!*”** Read about Satan ruling Babylon (Isaiah 14). This is an oppressive, violent dictatorship. Then you see that he controlled all the economics of the world through globalization (Ezekiel 28).

**Revelation 18:2-3 <sup>2</sup>And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen and is become the habitation of devils and the hold of every foul spirit and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. <sup>3</sup>For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.**

**These texts examine the woes of Babylon (Isaiah 14). Notice the similarities. The leaders of the earth are promoting globalization for the masses. Yet the masses will be impoverished because of this. Those who participate will be made *rich*. So, you see that Revelation 18 ties in with Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28. (Study them carefully).**

**Revelations 18:7-8 <sup>7</sup>How much she has glorified herself and lived deliciously, so much torment and sorrow give her: for she said in her heart, I sit a queen**

and am no widow and shall see no sorrow. <sup>8</sup>Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death and mourning and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judges her.

Who is this great woman? Obviously, it is a magnificent commercial power. She is a queen. Do you remember The Queen of Heaven? You find that she claims, “*I am no widow.*” Of course she is not a widow because she never married! Although she claims she will “*see no sorrow,*” in one day, it all comes to an end. Christ *returns* and Satan is imprisoned for a thousand years.

### Satan’s System Of Marriage

The main point being made concerns Satan’s system of marriage. This deals with the right of ownership, payment, prostitution and harlotry (sealing it all). This is a totally opposite system from Christ’s, which is, “*I am the way and the truth and the life.*” Satan’s system is totally different from God’s way. What does Christ find before He *returns* (Matthew 24)? If Satan did not deceive mankind, then man would have been held totally responsible. Satan plays a very *important* role in God’s *plan*. Because of Satan’s nature, he has a vital purpose to fulfill. He may know that God is using him. He also knows that, in the end, he will be placed in The Lake of Fire. Satan’s system tries to break up families, eliminate *inheritance* and turn the son against the father and the daughter against the mother. He does everything he can to destroy God’s system.

Another example of Satan’s method is the way he uses



homosexuality. Children cannot be born through homosexuality. This life-style is one of Satan's methods to con men and women. Before The Return of Christ, The Wrath of God is poured out upon Satan and Babylon. God proclaims that it takes *two witnesses* to pronounce someone guilty of adultery. Before Babylon falls, there are two witnesses who find her guilty. God uses the Satanic system so mankind will not be held responsible until their opportunity for *Salvation* comes along (The Lake of Fire).

## Two Witnesses

Where are *the two witnesses* who could testify against adultery? God's Law requires two or more witnesses. Perhaps, the two witnesses of Revelation 11 are *two churches*, which are called *candlesticks* (two candlesticks). In the beginning of *The Book of Revelation*, God says there are *seven candlesticks*.

After you are resurrected and become God's child (remember there can be no sin in the presence of God), then He will wipe away your tears and you will not remember them any more. All the painful things will be forgotten. You will come to the place of wanting to obey God. Most likely you will remember living on this earth. It seems logical that the lessons you have learned will not be forgotten. For example, when I was in the Navy, I disliked it so much that each day I'd put an "X" on my calendar until I was discharged. After being discharged and after a period of time, all I could do was talk about the fun times I had in the service. But I never forgot how I disliked it. God may have you remember the experience but not the pain and sufferings.

Another example is childbirth. After the child is born, the mother starts to forget the pain and suffering. When you are born into The Kingdom of God, you are happy because you will be *a Spirit being*. Mothers often go through a painful experience, but are left with such joy that there are no bad memories. I remember all the times that I was spanked by my father and my mother. Yet, I never held anything against them. My Dad would spank me hard. I would go into my bedroom and he would make me stay there. I would say, “*I’m going to run away when I grow up.*” Today that means nothing. I don’t remember the pain. But I know that I was spanked. Yet, I still loved my parents. And, after all is said and done, it helped me know what I should do and what I shouldn’t do. Christ does not do any judging until the time of The Jubilee. His role changes from Savior to Judge. He becomes The Judge of all Judges. He must *release* everyone during The Time of Jubilee. The Jubilee marks the end of Satan being used by God. Remember that *the purpose* of The Lake of Fire is to purge sin, so that everyone can repent through the death of the flesh. Only *the spirit* will survive and *live eternally* (I Corinthians 5:5)!

## Chapter 13

### GOD'S ETERNAL FIRE

Many pagans believe The Lake of Fire is an eternal fire. Some believe that once you are thrown in, you are tormented forever and are eternally toasted and roasted. Others believe that when you are thrown in, you will be completely incinerated. Actually, both of these beliefs are somewhat correct. As a Christian who wants to obey God, Satan will look for ways to confuse you. He does not need to tell you a straight-out lie, he just will not tell you The Whole Truth.

The best liar is one who believes his own lies (John 8:44). Satan was able to fool Eve. Since then, his prime targets are Christians, although he has, also, deceived many agnostics and atheists. Satan continually tries to fool you by twisting and camouflaging *the truth*. The whole world follows him (II Corinthians 4:4 and Revelation 12:9). Why did a loving God create a Lake of Fire? If all have sinned and the wages of sin is death, why resurrect anyone? Those who repent and want to change should be the only ones who are *resurrected to life*. Isn't this right? The unrepentant should remain dead. Doesn't that make sense?

Why would God resurrect people when He knows they will burn? This question should bother you because it doesn't sound like a loving God. What is *the real purpose* of The Lake of Fire? When you understand the reason for it, you will understand God and His *masterful plan*.

## Christ Returns

Revelation 19:20-21 <sup>20</sup>And the beast was taken and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beast and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone. <sup>21</sup>And the remnant were slain with the sword of him that sat upon the horse, which sword proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.

When Jesus Christ returns to the earth, He will subdue all the enemies of righteousness (Revelation 19). This takes place at The Great Battle of Armageddon. Christ becomes King of Kings and Lord of Lords. At that time, the political system will be headed by a person known as *the beast*. A false religious system known as The False Prophet will, also, exist. Christ will defeat all the hostile armies as He comes into Jerusalem.

The beast is part of the false political system (a Gentile creation) known as Babylon. Both the false religious system and the false political system are subdued at the end. *“These both were cast alive into a lake of fire.”* Notice the letter “a” in the phrase “a Lake of Fire.” It is not “the” Lake of Fire. This fire is “burning with brimstone.” (The Greek word for “brimstone” is “*theion*.” “*Theion*” can also mean “divine” as in something from God and “*theos*,” the root word, means “God”). When lightning struck the earth, the areas were called “*theia*” and a sulfurous smell wafted through the air. This is God’s Lake of Fire, a divine fire, a fire that purifies. *“And the remnant were slain with*

*the sword of him that sat upon the horse* [this is Christ].” Now, you can proceed to another phase of this prophesied condition.

Revelation 20:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. <sup>2</sup>And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil and Satan and bound him a thousand years <sup>3</sup>And cast him into the bottomless pit and shut him up and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. <sup>4</sup>And I saw thrones and they sat upon them and judgment was given to them; and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus and for the word of God and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. <sup>5</sup>But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. <sup>6</sup>Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Peter tells you *this “hell,”* which is called “*Tartaroo,*” is a “*place of restraint.*” This hell is reserved for Satan only. There is an angel with *the key to the bottomless pit* who has a great chain in his hand to bind Satan. Satan is bound in “*Tartaroo*” (a place of restraint). This will last for a thousand years. The false prophet and the beast are thrown

into a Lake of Fire. For 1,000 years, the beast and false prophet will be kept in a Lake of Fire where they have been cast. Now what happens? “*4And I saw thrones and they sat upon them and judgment was given to them.*” A resurrection takes place. Christ gives Judgment, but *the resurrected* (Christians) will, also, be judges. It is important to realize that the souls who are beheaded are those who bore witness of Jesus. This also includes those Christians who existed before *the resurrection*.

### A Thousand Years

The Lake of Fire will burn for at least a thousand years, but after those thousand years, this Lake of Fire will remain. “*5But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.*” These are those who are reigning with Christ. Those who are in the first resurrection will reign with Christ and help perform judgment during the thousand-year period. “*Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power.*” The second death has no power. So, there must be *two deaths*. How can there be two deaths?

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment.

The Greek word for “*appointed*” means “*reserve*” or “*set aside.*” This is appointed when you reserve something such as “*to men once to die.*” Is this a contradiction? In *Revelation* there are two deaths. Paul very clearly says that “*it is appointed [reserved] to men once to die.*” It is only appointed for you to die once. When you sin and

then die, your sins are paid in full. This is because “*the wages of sin is death.*” That is the end result. Why, then, will you be resurrected and thrown into The Fire to die again? “*But after this the judgment.*” There is something about this *second death* that you need to understand.

## Two Resurrections

Revelation 20:6 Blessed and holy is he that has part in the first resurrection: on such the second death has no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.

Here, the second death means something more than just being destroyed or dying. You need to understand that these individuals will be “*priests of God* [they will be the ones who will rule with Christ] *and of Christ and shall reign with him a thousand years.*”

John 5:25-29 <sup>25</sup>Verily, verily, I say to you, The hour is coming and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. <sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. <sup>28</sup>Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, <sup>29</sup>And shall come forth; they that have done good, to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation.

This critical text ties in with Revelation 20 and The First Resurrection. This is The First Resurrection and *the sec-*

*and death has no power, “<sup>26</sup>For as the Father has life in himself; so has he given to the Son to have life in himself; <sup>27</sup>And has given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.”* (Reread Chapter 8 – ‘*Marriage, The Great Mystery*’). **Marriage pertains to The Jubilee Year. God is making Christians *One* with Him through marriage. You will be *redeemed* by your Savior *before The Jubilee*. When does everyone else get *resurrected*? It is at *The Jubilee*. There is a big difference.**

**If you are *redeemed*, it means that you are removed from slavery (ahead of time). During The Jubilee Year, the remainder will be set at liberty (released). When Jesus Christ first came, He said that He *judges* no man. He said that His Father has given all *judgment* to Him. These are two different responsibilities. When Christ came as The Messiah, He came as The Groom for His Bride (The Jews) or, in The Judgment, as Judge.**

**John, The Baptizer prepared *the way* fulfilling the role of the best man (John 3). But The Israelites (The Jews), who were fulfilling the role of The Bride, *rejected* Him. They said “*No*” to the marriage. Christ, then, went to The Gentile world, calling them to become Christians or His Bride. Since The Israelites (The Jews) rejected Christ, The Gentiles had their opportunity to be ahead of The Israelites. At that time, Christ started to build His Church. Christ *redeemed* The Church by buying Her with His life. As Savior and Redeemer, He was purchasing Her before The Jubilee Year or Year of Release (Leviticus 25). When He becomes Judge and judgment is given to Him, there is no time to buy anyone back. The fifty years are up. It will, then, be *The Time of The Release*.**



## Time Of Judgment

Pagans think The Day of Judgment is a horrible time. However, The Day of Judgment is a wonderful occasion. The word “*damnation*” is an English translation referring to The Lake of Fire. By translating the word “*damnation*,” in Greek, people believe they go into The Lake of Fire and burn forever. The word for “*judgment*” is “*krisis*,” which, in Greek, means “*critical*” or “*crises*.” Its root means a “*turning point*” or a “*change*.” When Christ comes as Redeemer and Savior before the end of The Jubilee (or end-time), He will *redeem* you (Job 19:26). Christ, as Redeemer, must buy you ahead of time with His very *life*.

Once The Jubilee Year (The Marriage Feast) is complete and *The Time of Redemption* is over, Christ then becomes The Judge. He decides who is punished and for how long. Do you remember the parable of the penny and the laborers? In Jesus' parable, the householder hired laborers, some in the early morning and some at the eleventh hour. But He gave them all just one penny. Some individuals became angry. Some didn't like the fact that a few worked so much longer and received the same amount of money as those who worked for a shorter period of time (Matthew 20). There is a big difference in Christ's responsibilities as Redeemer, Savior and Judge. “*Krisis*” or “*turning point*” is a significant time for The Jubilee Release of all others. All are *saved* or *released* (I John 4:14), which is *the real purpose* of The Lake of Fire.

Now, for the next *resurrection*, “<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves*

*shall hear his voice,* <sup>29</sup>*And shall come forth; they that have done good to the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, to the resurrection of damnation*" (John 5). This is The Judgment. It is "*krisis*," which is the same Greek word you just read. They are not damned, but rather, it is their *turning point*.

How many resurrections exist in The Second Resurrection? There is only one. Some people believe there are two resurrections. Some people believe that The Resurrection of Life is *one resurrection* followed by a 100-year time period. Some feel this was followed by a *third resurrection*. However, this is not so. There are *not* three resurrections. Notice these words specified earlier, "<sup>28</sup>*Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all* [not two more resurrections] *that are in the graves shall hear his voice.*" So, there are only *two resurrections*. The first one takes place before The Millennium and the second one happens after The Millennium. The Second Resurrection has two divisions. There is a *resurrection* of those who are *resurrected* to receive *life*. Then, the rest are thrown into The Lake of Fire.

## The First Resurrection

In *The First Resurrection*, The Church is *redeemed* and *saved*. The Second Resurrection comes 1,000 years later. This is *The 11<sup>th</sup> Hour Redemption*. There is no redemption for anyone else. Now, it is time to learn about these events from another perspective. This comes through continued study.

Revelation 20:7-15 <sup>7</sup>And when the thousand years are

expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison. <sup>8</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. <sup>9</sup>And they went up on the breadth of the earth and compassed the camp of the saints about and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them. <sup>10</sup>And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. <sup>11</sup>And I saw a great white throne and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. <sup>12</sup>And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. <sup>13</sup>And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. <sup>14</sup>And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. <sup>15</sup>And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.

## The Second Death

How many deaths are appointed to individuals? There is only one (Hebrews 9:27). One death is physical. This would mean that the *second death* must be a different type of death. The text in Revelation 20:7 shows that, “<sup>7</sup>when the thousand years are expired, Satan will be loosed out

*of his prison [Tartaroo, Satan's Hell]. <sup>8</sup>And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth."*

Then, these armies of Gog and Magog surround New Jerusalem. But God destroys Jerusalem's enemies, "<sup>9</sup>*And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.*" Then, "<sup>10</sup>*And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone [“brimstone” has a great meaning] where the beast and the false prophet are and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.*" The words “forever and ever” in Greek really mean “ages and ages.”

It does not mean eternity, just *a continuation* during an *age* or period. Then, the rebellious ones are tormented. No one knows how long this will take, but you do know that the beast and false prophet are thrown into The Lake of Fire. So 1,000 years go by and this Lake of Fire is still around. Does that mean they will burn for 1,000 years? *The Bible* does not reveal that but they probably will not. Why throw Satan into The Lake of Fire if he is a spirit and cannot die?

Read what is revealed to John, "<sup>12</sup>*And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.*" Did you know that God has a report card for every human being He has ever created? What is the reason for counting every little thing? If a person is no good, then he is no good. He is

good or he is bad. He is either a sheep or a goat. So all that is needed is to throw the bad ones into The Lake of Fire. Isn't that what Christ said? Those who refuse to repent or *grow spiritually* will go directly into The Fire. Isn't that right? <sup>13</sup>*And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.*" This shows that there is only *one resurrection*.

Christ said, *"Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear His voice"* (John 5:28). Do you find that each person is in a resurrection (Revelation 20:12-13)? Look at this, <sup>14</sup>*And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire.*" Hell is *"hades"* or the *"grave"* and *"death"* is the *absence* of life.

## The Torture Of Death

The dead are thrown into The Lake of Fire. Is God going to torture death and the grave? How does God torture death? There are two types of deaths, but only one death, the physical death is *guaranteed*. *The second death cannot be a death*. Are the pagans right or are they wrong? Do people burn forever and ever? How can the second death be death if it is only reserved (appointed) for men to die once? Look at that text again, <sup>14</sup>*And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.* <sup>15</sup>*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."*

*The Book of Life* is a marriage registry. *The Lamb's Book of Life* is nothing more than the story of Jesus becoming worthy to be The Groom and Savior. He brings His Wife

(the church) and makes her ready. He prepares her for **The Wedding** (along with **The Guests**). “<sup>15</sup>*And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into The Lake of Fire.*” The people who go to **The Wedding Feast** are the ones who are written in *The Book of Life*. Christ is **The Groom** and **The Husband**, **The Bride** is *The Church* and **The Guests** are attendants. The last verse states that many are called but few are chosen. So, where do the majority go? A minister once gave a message entitled, “*Who Is Going to be Saved?*” He said that he was sorry to tell everyone that the majority will not be *saved*. Many churches believe that the only ones who will be *saved* are those written in *The Book of Life*. The majority will get thrown into **The Lake of Fire**.

In studying *The Scriptures*, the churches can logically come to this conclusion and agree with the old pagan teaching that *most* will be burned up. A number is given (Daniel 7). That number is approximately 100,000,000 individuals. If only 100,000,000 people are saved, then billions of others will be lost. Yet you read that human beings will only die once (Hebrews 9:27).

## Punishment of Stripes

Luke 12:42-48 <sup>42</sup>And the Lord said, Who then is that faithful and wise steward, whom his lord shall make ruler over his household, to give them their portion of meat in due season? <sup>43</sup>Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing. <sup>44</sup>Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has. <sup>45</sup>But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat the

menservants and maidens and to eat and drink and to be drunken; <sup>46</sup>The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for him and at an hour when he is not aware and will cut him in sunder and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. <sup>47</sup>And that servant, which knew his lord's will and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes. <sup>48</sup>But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.

The Lord will appoint a ruler who has *life* and will give them their portion (Verse 42). The word "*portion*" in Greek is "*meros*." It can also be translated as "*part*." These individuals will receive their *portion* or *their part* of the meat in due season.

The result is, "<sup>43</sup>*Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he comes shall find so doing.* [Now, the main point] <sup>44</sup>*Of a truth I say to you, that he will make him ruler over all that he has.*" This is The First Resurrection. This is the good result. Now, you are informed about a different type of result, "<sup>45</sup>*But and if that servant say in his heart, My lord delays his coming; and shall begin to beat the menservants and maidens...* [this is about those who do not have God's Law written in their hearts. This means] <sup>46</sup>*The lord of that servant will come in a day when he looks not for him.*"

## Parable Of Virgins

The parable of *the virgins* fits in here. Five were wise and

five were not. So, the door was closed on the five who were not wise. Realize that all this happens “*at an hour when he is not aware and will cut him in sunder and will appoint him [meros] his portion [his part] with [whom?] the unbelievers.*” The word for “unbelievers” in Greek is “*apistos.*” The exact Greek meaning, also, indicates “*what portion they receive.*” “<sup>47</sup>*And that servant, which knew his lord's will and prepared not himself, neither did according to his will, shall be beaten with many stripes.* [You learn some will be beaten with many stripes and will get a portion with the unbelievers]. <sup>48</sup>*But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes.*” This is the time when everyone who does not know Christ will receive their stripes. They will be in direct proportion to how much they understood and followed God's teaching. Either that or it will be to the degree to which they had sinned. Those who never knew God and died as babies will only see or feel a small amount of the heat of *the fire*. They will change quickly.

II Peter 3:8 But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years as one day.

Some churches believe The Judgment Period is 100 years long and some believe it lasts for a 1,000 years, as the verse indicates. This is the *krisis* or *the turning point*.

Luke 12:48 But he that knew not and did commit things worthy of stripes, shall be beaten with few stripes. For to whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required: and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.



Those who did not know Christ at all will receive a small penalty. Much will be expected of those with more Godly knowledge, teaching and understanding. Less will be expected of those with little ability or little knowledge of Christ. Depending upon the amount of *truth* you have along with your level of Christianity, you are responsible to follow those *truths*.

### Christians And Non-Christians

Humans, who are not Christians, will die and be *resurrected*. They will still pay but with fewer stripes. If, however, you know a great deal of *biblical truth* and you do nothing with it, then you will pay with many more stripes. This divides The Christians from the unbelievers. In other words, *a heavier judgment* will be placed upon The Christians than upon *the unbelievers*. The sobering thought is that what you, as a Christian, leave as *a witness* before you die determines how many stripes you will eventually obtain. Christians who refuse to *grow spiritually* will receive more punishment which means more stripes.

Revelation 21:7-8 <sup>7</sup>He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.

<sup>8</sup>But the fearful and unbelieving and the abominable and murderers and whoremongers and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

*The unbelievers* had better beware. The word for “*unbeliever*” in Greek is “*apistos*” (in Luke 12). They are grouped with “*the abominable and murderers and whoremongers*”

*and sorcerers and idolaters and all liars, shall have [“meros” or their portion] their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.”* The stripes are reserved for those who burn. This is so they can be purified like gold (I Corinthians 3:13-15). Most will have to go into The Lake of Fire, but the hardest judgment will be for Christians who refused to grow. When more knowledge is given and understood, more is expected. Only a few guests are allowed to attend The Wedding (Matthew 22:14). So why does God have The Lake of Fire and what is its *purpose*?

## Purpose Of The Lake Of Fire

Matthew 3:7-11 <sup>7</sup>But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said to them, O generation of vipers, who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come? <sup>8</sup>Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: <sup>9</sup>And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say to you, that God is able of these stones to raise up children to Abraham. <sup>10</sup>And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees: therefore every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire. <sup>11</sup>I indeed baptize you with water to repentance: but he that comes after me is mightier than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost and with fire.

Follow each step carefully. Do not miss one point or you will miss a good portion of the puzzle, *“<sup>7</sup>But when he [John, The Baptizer] saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said to them, O generation of vipers*

[Satan is a serpent, viper, snake] *who has warned you to flee from the wrath to come?*"

There are many people who believe they are *true Christians* because they follow *The Law of Moses*. The Sadducees and Pharisees were *the seed of Abraham* and were circumcised. They were part of *the promise*. Both groups thought they were doing just fine in God's sight, but God did not perceive them in that *light*. Remember that *The Law* was only to bring them to Christ (repentance). After that, *The Works of The Law* were *no longer needed*.

The purpose for The Lake of Fire is now revealed, "<sup>10</sup>*And now also the axe is laid to the root of the trees.*" This is not just chopping trees down but demolishing *the root*, which is the very *life* and the very *flesh*. *The fire* changes their hearts. This equates to a *true repentance*. It is a change in *The Spirit in man*, down to the root.

## Acting Sweet And Doing Good

Acting sweet and doing good doesn't necessarily make you a Christian. There must be a change in your nature, "<sup>10</sup>*therefore every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.*" There are two hells here: 1) Hell (grave) and 2) Gehenna (The Lake of Fire). The Greek word for "*fire*" in Verse 10 is "*pur*," "*pore*" or "*pure*." The English word "*pure*" or "*purify*" comes from the Greek word for "*fire*." So, "*every tree which brings not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire.*" This is purification. John talks about his form of baptism compared to the form of The One who will follow him. John says, "*he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost*

[Spirit] *and with fire.*” The Lake of Fire is also a baptism. Remember, there are *three baptisms*: 1) A baptism by water, 2) The baptism of the Holy Spirit and 3) A baptism by fire. What is *the purpose* of baptism?

Acts 2:38 Then Peter said to them, Repent and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.

Peter gave this sermon on The Day of Pentecost. This was the time of The Jubilee and all were speaking in tongues (interpreting in the different languages) so that each nationality could understand Peter’s teachings. Peter told them to repent and be baptized. This was an urgent message. *The purpose of baptism* is to repent of sins.

- 1) Baptism by water represents the death of your sins which are being washed away.
- 2) Baptism by The Holy Spirit cleanses your sins which leads to truth.
- 3) Baptism by fire causes repentance and purification of sins, “*and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost* [Spirit].”

## Dead Works

Hebrews 6:1 Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on to perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works and of faith toward God.

Paul explains the basic doctrines of Christianity, “<sup>1</sup>*not laying again the foundation [doctrine] of repentance from dead works.*” God identifies any human effort to make yourself righteous, as *dead works*. Being right with God requires *repentance* and not doing dead works. Religious works do not change you or anyone else. You must become like a little child. Repentance is asking God to change you. “*Repentance*” in Greek means “*a change of mind.*” The Apostle Paul said he was blameless in keeping *The Law* but counted it all as “*dung*” (Philippians 3:8).

There is nothing you or anyone can do on a religious basis that will change you. Repentance from dead works is just a beginning principle or the first step on *the ladder* to Christ. This is not *strong meat*. Strong meat comes later. After repentance from dead works, three baptisms can take place: 1) Water, 2) Holy Spirit and 3) Fire. Water washes away your sins, but it can never change you. When The Israelites left Egypt (a picture of sin), they had a *water baptism* by going through *the sea*. That was their symbolic baptism and repentance was not required (although circumcision was necessary). They had their sins overlooked so that when they reached Sinai, God could be their God. Here is another example. At the time of Noah, the world was so evil that every thought was nothing but evil. Then, God baptized (by flooding) the whole world. In this way, He cleansed the world from sin (read Genesis 6). However, there was *no repentance*. In a similar manner, when Israel went through the wilderness, the whole generation rebelled against God and ended up dying in that wilderness. A new generation came up and they were, also, baptized when they crossed The Jordan River. They went into *the promised land*, but there was

still *no repentance*. The message was purified when John, The Baptist came and said, “*Repent.*” Remember, he was preparing *the way* for Christ. You must have a change of mind before you can receive The Holy Spirit. This is in addition to the water washing away your sins.

## Baptism Of Holy Spirit

Acts 2:1-3 <sup>1</sup>And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. <sup>2</sup>And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind and it filled all the house where they were sitting. <sup>3</sup>And there appeared to them cloven tongues like as of fire and it sat upon each of them.

You can be baptized, but it will not and cannot make you perfect. You cannot make yourself *righteous*. It will never happen. No religious works can change you. No matter how much you may try, you cannot change what you are. The Apostles had to wait until The Day of Pentecost. Then, God gave them The Gift of The Holy Spirit. *The Scriptures* explain The Holy Spirit. Remember, the word in Greek for “*fire*” is “*pur*” meaning “*pure*” or “*purify.*” The *purpose* of The Holy Spirit is to purify.

The result was that the baptism of The Holy Spirit “<sup>3</sup>*sat upon each of them.*” The participants spoke in foreign tongues because God gave them that ability as a *gift* to His *church* so they could explain Christ’s teachings to *the unbelievers* in their language. They discovered *the truth* in their own native tongue. There was no need to speak in tongues for the believers who already understood the language (I Corinthians 14).

Hebrews 4:12 For the word of God is quick and powerful and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit and of the joints and marrow and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart.

A person is burned and purified down to his/her individual *spirit*. The Holy Spirit is like a fire which cleanses all that it touches.

John 14: 16-17 <sup>16</sup>And I will pray the Father and he shall give you another Comforter, that he may abide with you for ever; <sup>17</sup>Even the Spirit of truth; whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him: but you know him; for he dwells with you and shall be in you.

## Fire Purifier

Christ had to give you that *gift*. Christ told The Disciples that He was going to leave this earth to be with His Father. However, He was going to send another Comforter. The Holy Spirit is a fire purifier and is *the truth*. God's Spirit "*In You*" reveals *the truth* through God's *word*, which is sharper than a two-edged sword. It cuts right through to the soul and spirit. Read the whole story about The Lake of Fire in I Corinthians 15 and Hebrews 12. It is imperative that you study these accounts.

Matthew 5:27-30 <sup>27</sup>You have heard that it was said by them of old time, You shall not commit adultery: <sup>28</sup>But I say to you, That whosoever looks on a woman to lust after her has committed adultery with her already in

his heart. <sup>29</sup>And if your right eye offend you, pluck it out and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish and not that your whole body should be cast into hell. <sup>30</sup>And if your right hand offend you, cut it off and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members should perish and not that your whole body should be cast into hell.

Jesus Christ explains a little more about The Lake of Fire. You now know the type of *righteousness* that Christians must have. You are not dealing with *The Law of Moses* here but with The Royal Law. *The Law* you are now under is The Royal Law. *The Law of Moses* gives an opportunity for *unconverted people* to come to Christ (Galatians 3:10-13 and I Timothy 1:9).

Notice the words “*the right eye.*” Christ is explaining human nature in this example. He uses *an eye* as a metaphor for *sin*. Christ is talking about the different parts of sin within your nature. It needs to be *plucked out*. This must happen in order to prevent you from being cast into Gehenna. When you become *a witness* of Christ as His Ambassador, it means that you are willing to give up your life and put to death anything that is in your human nature.

This is not martyrdom. Paul said, “*though I give my body to be burned and have not charity [agàpè] it profits me nothing*” (I Corinthians 13:3). You need a change of nature. God is asking if you are willing to give up your way of doing things, even when you think you are doing what is right. When you *repent*, you have a change of heart and you put your human nature to death.



**I Corinthians 3:1-5** <sup>1</sup>And I, brethren, could not speak to you as to spiritual, but as to carnal, even as to babes in Christ. <sup>2</sup>I have fed you with milk and not with meat: for hitherto you were not able to bear it, neither yet now are you able. <sup>3</sup>For you are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying and strife and divisions, are you not carnal and walk as men? <sup>4</sup>For while one said, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are you not carnal? <sup>5</sup>Who then is Paul and who is Apollos, but ministers by whom you believed, even as the Lord gave to every man?

**You can be *babes* “*In Christ*” and still retain your carnal nature. What is revealed when people still have a carnal nature? They are still fed with milk and not meat.**

**I Corinthians 3:6-15** <sup>6</sup>I have planted, Apollos watered; but God gave the increase. <sup>7</sup>So then neither is he that plants any thing, neither he that waters; but God that gives the increase. <sup>8</sup>Now he that plants and he that waters are one: and every man shall receive his own reward according to his own labour. <sup>9</sup>For we are labourers together with God: you are God's husbandry, you are God's building. <sup>10</sup>According to the grace of God which is given to me, as a wise master builder, I have laid the foundation and another builds thereon. But let every man take heed how he builds thereupon. <sup>11</sup>For other foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. <sup>12</sup>Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; <sup>13</sup>Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every

man's work of what sort it is. <sup>14</sup>If any man's work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. <sup>15</sup>If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

Paul was first on the scene and he planted. Apollos came along later and helped to tend to the growing plants. But only God gave the increase. No one but God can change you. This addresses ministers and everyone else. Paul told you he was more diligent than all the others. He was like a wise master-builder. God revealed more to him as he dealt with *the church* and with The Gentiles. Peter, on the other hand, spent his time with The Israelites. Paul said, "*I have laid the foundation and another builds thereon. But let every man take heed how he builds thereupon.*" It is scary when you think of what ministers preach and when you contemplate how you live your *Christian life*.

### Pluck Out An Eye?

They now had the foundation but were still carnal. They were just babes "*In Christ.*" They weren't willing to pluck out *the eye*. They weren't willing to cut off *the arm*. They weren't willing to kill their carnal nature. A preacher should worry about what he preaches. A person who claims to be a Christian should be concerned about what he believes and the way he lives his life. This is because, "*the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire.*"

If only *an eye* has caused you to sin, you might burn for a short time. If, in your lifetime, you have given more of

your body over to sin, then you will burn longer, which means more stripes since, *“the fire shall try every man’s work of what sort it is.”* Is your nature changing? Are you growing *spiritually* or not? You must have a goal (read Matthew 5:48). You must strive to become *perfect* during *your lifetime*. *“<sup>15</sup>If any man’s work abide which he has built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.* [The church gets the role of performing as Judge and Ruler]. *If any man’s work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss [an eye or an arm might have to go] but he himself shall be saved.”* The Baptism of Fire saves the person.

I Corinthians 5:4-5 <sup>4</sup>In the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together and my spirit, with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ, <sup>5</sup>To deliver such an one to Satan for the destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus (Judgment).

Paul chastised the people during The Days of Unleavened Bread for allowing a fornicator to be in their company (I Corinthians 5). He told them they should keep The Feast by observing what the day means sincerely and truthfully (by not sinning). Paul commanded *the church* to expel this man and deliver him to Satan. Satan helps God whether he wants to or not. Paul is saying to give this sinner *“to Satan for the destruction of the flesh.”* Everything in the flesh (human nature) and all that is corruptible must burn. You either do it willingly by accepting *the gift of purification* by *The Holy Spirit* through God or you are going *to burn*. The reason for this is, *“that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus”* (I Corinthians 5:5). The flesh and its works will be destroyed while *the spirit* will

be *saved*. This means the second death will be something else, as you shall shortly see.

## The Second Death

**Jude 6-13** <sup>6</sup>And the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness to the judgment of the great day. <sup>7</sup>Even as Sodom and Gomorrha and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire. <sup>8</sup>Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion and speak evil of dignities. <sup>9</sup>Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke you. <sup>10</sup>But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. <sup>11</sup>Woe to them! For they have gone in the way of Cain and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward and perished in the gainsaying of Core. <sup>12</sup>These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withers, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; <sup>13</sup>Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.

**Jude is describing the people who must go into The Lake of Fire. He is warning them with these fearsome words,**

*“the angels which kept not their first estate, but left their own habitation, [these angels didn't follow God but followed Satan instead. This is why] he has reserved in everlasting chains under darkness to the judgment of the great day.”*

## Sodom And Gomorrah

Sodom and Gomorrah are used as extreme negative examples of human nature. *The purpose of the fire is to purify.* Christ says that The Judgment will be more tolerable for those of Sodom and Gomorrah (who will be *saved*) than for The Sadducees and Pharisees. Sodom and Gomorrah is an example of The Lake of Fire. You must respect authority. This applies to the rulers of this world. Even though they may not be good, God allows them to be in charge. That is a part of being a Christian. *“Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke you.”* Demons are more powerful than you, so you must ask God, in the name of Jesus Christ, to protect you. Remember, Satan is more powerful than Michael, The Archangel.

Analyze the examples of Cain and Balaam. Cain was a murderer and Balaam took a bribe. He was paid to curse Israel. It was a bribe because he took money for telling *the truth*. God looks upon ministers who take money from their flock in the same way. Korah, who told Moses and Aaron that they were taking too much authority upon themselves, ended up being burned.

Jude says, *“<sup>12</sup>These are spots in your feasts of charity when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds*

*they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots.” This is exactly what John said Christ would do. These are, “<sup>13</sup>Raging waves of the sea, foaming out of their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.” There are two deaths. This involves the whole root. Everything will be thrown into The Lake of Fire. Spirit beings will also feel the torment of the fire.*

I Corinthians 15:1-13 <sup>1</sup>Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you have received and wherein you stand; <sup>2</sup>By which also you are saved, if you keep in memory what I preached to you, unless you have believed in vain. <sup>3</sup>For I delivered to you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; <sup>4</sup>And that he was buried and he rose again the third day according to the scriptures; <sup>5</sup>And that he was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve: <sup>6</sup>After that, he was seen of above five hundred brethren at once; of whom the greater part remain to this present, but some are fallen asleep. <sup>7</sup>After that, he was seen of James; then of all the apostles. <sup>8</sup>And last of all he was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. <sup>9</sup>For I am the least of the apostles that am not meet to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the church of God. <sup>10</sup>But by the grace of God I am what I am: and his grace which was bestowed upon me was not in vain; but I laboured more abundantly than they all: yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. <sup>11</sup>Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach, and so you believed. <sup>12</sup>Now if Christ be preached that

he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead? <sup>13</sup>But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen.

When Paul said he worked more fervently than the other Apostles, he said, “*yet not I, but the grace of God which was with me. <sup>11</sup>Therefore whether it were I or they, so we preach and so you believed.*”

## No Resurrection?

Now, to the main point, “<sup>12</sup>*Now if Christ be preached that he rose from the dead, how say some among you that there is no resurrection of the dead?* [The subject from here forward is The Resurrection of The Dead. The lead-in is] <sup>13</sup>*But if there be no resurrection of dead, then is Christ not risen.*”

I Corinthians 15:19-26 <sup>19</sup>If in this life only we have hope in Christ, we are of all men most miserable. <sup>20</sup>But now is Christ risen from the dead and become the first fruits of them that slept. <sup>21</sup>For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead. <sup>22</sup>For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. <sup>23</sup>But every man in his own order: Christ the first fruits; afterward they that are Christ's at his coming. <sup>24</sup>Then comes the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. <sup>25</sup>For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet. <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.

**Paul compares death to being asleep. However, this is not**

a permanent sleep (I Corinthians 15:19-20). “<sup>21</sup>*For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.*” So, if you died in Adam (the flesh), you have life “*In Christ.*”

The key point is, “<sup>22</sup>*For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.*” Everyone shall eventually receive *Eternal Life*. How clear do you want it to be? Paul said the same thing (I Timothy 2:3-4). Peter also said that God is, “*not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance*” (II Peter 3:9).

The text says, “*For as in Adam all die* [every human being has an appointed time], *even so in Christ shall all be made alive.* [So everyone will be made alive. The second death cannot be death. This is not *death* as you know it]. <sup>23</sup>*But every man in his own order* [You must get the sequence! It follows with]: *Christ the first fruits.*” First, Jesus was resurrected as The Son of God, then, “*afterward they that are Christ's at His coming.*” This continues with John 5:25 and Revelation 20:6, “*blessed are those who are in the first resurrection because upon them there is no second death.*”

The final part is now introduced, “<sup>24</sup>*Then comes the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power.*” What is it that He must put down? The answer is, “<sup>25</sup>*For he must reign, till he has put all enemies under his feet.* <sup>26</sup>*The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.*” So death will no longer exist. Christ's last job, before He turns *the kingdom* over to God, is to *abolish death*. In order for death to be abolished, no one can be dead.



Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD's hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

**God does not sin. God cannot sin and He cannot be around sin. Satan can come before God's throne even though he is a sinner. Why is this? Because Satan is a *spirit being*, he can appear before God. "*Behold, the LORD's hand is not shortened* [is God a liar?] *But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.*" It is the conduct of the individual that causes the separation.**

## Why God Hides His Face

**God hides His face from you because of your sins. Everyone has sinned (Romans 3:21). No one will see God until there is no sin in anyone. Christ confirms that you have, "*never heard or seen The Father.*" That also means at Mount Sinai Moses *did not see God*. Stephen states that it was an angel in the burning bush (Acts 7). God comes to *the new earth* and *the new heaven* after sin and death are abolished by Christ (I Corinthians 15:26 and Revelation 21:22).**

I Corinthians 13:11-12 <sup>11</sup>When I was a child, I spoke as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. <sup>12</sup>For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

**That can happen only when you are without sin. You will see God face-to-face when you have no sin. No minister or Christian has all *the truth*. If a minister says he has all *the truth*, then he is a liar. The best anyone can do is know “*in part*.”**

**I Corinthians 15:26-28** <sup>26</sup>The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. <sup>27</sup>For he has put all things under his feet. But when he said all things are put under him, it is manifest that he is excepted, which did put all things under him. <sup>28</sup>And when all things shall be subdued to him, then shall the Son also himself be subject to him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

**Death is the last thing to be subdued under Christ. If death is removed, then sin is also gone. *So, everyone will live*. One of the laws of physics is *The Law of Diminishing Returns*. All things must die. Everything is corruptible. Not only do humans die but the stars in the heavens die, too. When some stars die, they are called black holes. Finally, they burn out.**

**God does not live in this universe. God is *not going to return* until Christ puts sin to death. When Christ puts all corruption to death, then God will come. At that time, you will be able to see Him face-to-face. God's *kingdom* is a *spiritual kingdom* and *not a corruptible kingdom*, which can burn.**

**I Corinthians 15:32-37** <sup>32</sup>If after the manner of men I have fought with beasts at Ephesus, what advantage it me, if the dead rise not? let us eat and

drink: for tomorrow we die. <sup>33</sup>Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. <sup>34</sup>Awake to righteousness and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak *this* to your shame. <sup>35</sup>But some *man* will say, How are the dead raised up? And with what body do they come? <sup>36</sup>You fool, that which you sow is not quickened, except it die: <sup>37</sup>And that which you sow, you sow not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other *grain*.

Now, what happens in The Lake of Fire? Paul talks about what The Apostles go through. He said, “<sup>32</sup>*I fought with beasts at Ephesus...<sup>33</sup>Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners. <sup>34</sup>Awake to righteousness and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame.*”

## To Be Quickened

Remember, in the beginning the people were carnal in nature (I Corinthians 3). To be “*quickened*” is to be “*energized*” or “*made alive*.” That is a more understandable definition for the word “*quickened*.” Heavenly things have a *different glory* than the things which are earthly.

I Corinthians 15:47-53 <sup>47</sup>The first man is of the earth, earthy: the second man is the Lord from heaven. <sup>48</sup>As is the earthy, such are they also that are earthy: and as is the heavenly, such are they also that are heavenly. <sup>49</sup>And as we have borne the image of the earthy, we shall also bear the image of the heavenly. <sup>50</sup>Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit

The Kingdom of God; neither does corruption inherit incorruption. <sup>51</sup>Behold, I show you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, <sup>52</sup>In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed. <sup>53</sup>For this corruptible must put on incorruption and this mortal must put on immortality.

Do you remember what Christ said about *the eye*? If your eye offends you, then spiritually pluck it out (get rid of it)! You must get rid of whatever is fleshly and of a carnal nature. Only *the spiritual* can remain.

### The Mystery

Paul said, “<sup>51</sup>*Behold I show you a mystery.*” If these individuals go into The Lake of Fire, will they have to be resurrected? The answer is, “*We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed.*” So this is not a *resurrection*. There is no need for another *resurrection*. Something happens in The Lake of Fire that does not require a *resurrection*. There will be another Resurrection of The Church (I Thessalonians 4). Those who are alive when Christ *returns* will be *resurrected* to meet Him in the clouds. This includes those who are dead. The event is described as, “<sup>52</sup>*In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump* [this applies to the church] *for the trumpet shall sound and the dead shall be raised incorruptible and we shall be changed.*”

There is *no resurrection* because, “<sup>53</sup>*For this corruptible* [this human body] *must put on incorruption* [a spiritual body].” What does this mean? Scientists, such as Ste-

phen Hawking, are working on other universe theories with other dimensions where The Laws of Physics do not apply like they do here on earth. God says there are *three heavens* and *He resides in the third heaven* (the first heaven is the atmosphere, the second is the universe and the third is another universe). It is a non-Euclidean universe, meaning that the universe is not static (some scientists think ours is). There are no deaths in the third universe. Nothing in that universe can die. It is an incorruptible universe. Scientifically, it is another dimension. It is *spiritual* and not carbon-based.

I Corinthians 15:54 So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written. Death is swallowed up in victory.

This is another period of time when the question of death is answered. This text is *not* talking about *the first resurrection*. The conclusion is, “*Death is swallowed up in victory.*” Christ finally destroys death.

## How Does Christ End Death?

How does Christ bring an end to death? He changes everything that is corruptible into being incorruptible. That is the reason there is no resurrection. The resurrection that happens in The Lake of Fire is not a resurrection per se because it is a change *from corruptible to being incorruptible*.

Hebrews 12:1-21 <sup>1</sup>Wherefore seeing we also are

compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight and the sin which does so easily beset us and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup>Looking to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. <sup>3</sup>For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest you be wearied and faint in your minds. <sup>4</sup>You have not yet resisted to blood, striving against sin. <sup>5</sup>And you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to children, My son, despise not you the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of him: <sup>6</sup>For whom the Lord loves he chastens and scourges every son whom he receives. <sup>7</sup>If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastened not? <sup>8</sup>But if you be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are you bastards and not sons. <sup>9</sup>Further more we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits and live? <sup>10</sup>For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness. <sup>11</sup>Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are exercised thereby. <sup>12</sup>Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down and the feeble knees; <sup>13</sup>And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. <sup>14</sup>Follow peace with all men and holiness, without

which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup>Looking diligently less any man fail of the grace of God; less any root of bitterness springing up trouble you and thereby many be defiled; <sup>16</sup>Less there be any fornicator or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. <sup>17</sup>For you know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears. <sup>18</sup>For you are not come to the mount that might be touched and that burned with fire, nor to blackness and darkness and tempest <sup>19</sup>And the sound of a trumpet and the voice of words; which voice they that heard entreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: <sup>20</sup>(For they could not endure that which was commanded And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned or thrust through with a dart: <sup>21</sup>And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:).

The two main chapters on this subject are Hebrews 12 and I Corinthians 15. God reveals an amazing message to you. There must be a Lake of Fire because it is a baptism. It purges sin and when there is no sin, there is no death. All the children of God have to endure this. *“<sup>1</sup>Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight.”* This is encouraging because whatever happens in your Christian lives (no matter how much pain, sorrow or torture), you must lay it aside as, *“the sin which does so easily beset us and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, <sup>2</sup>Looking to Jesus the author and finisher of our faith.”* Christ is *“the finisher”* because He was victorious over death. He is *“the beginner”* and *“the finisher.”* He did it all. Much

is accomplished through adversity, “<sup>5</sup>*you have forgotten the exhortation which speaks to you as to children, My son, despise not you the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when you are rebuked of him: <sup>6</sup>For whom the Lord loves he chastens and scourges.*”

### Length Of Stay In The Lake Of Fire

How long do individuals remain in The Lake of Fire? It will be only long enough to insure the right result. There must be enough time to get the job done. This is to guarantee success. This applies to “*every son whom he receives*. [If you don't go into fire, you are not one of His]. <sup>7</sup>*If you endure chastening, God deals with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chastens not? <sup>8</sup>But if you be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are you bastards and not sons* [there is no inheritance]. <sup>11</sup>*Now no chastening for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yields the peaceable fruit of righteousness to them which are exercised thereby.*” What does God's Holy Spirit do? Christ ascended and is able to give you The Holy Spirit as a Comforter.

After you are changed by The Word of God and scourged, then you receive the peaceful fruit of *righteousness*, which is your Comforter. “<sup>12</sup>*Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down and the feeble knees; <sup>13</sup>And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. <sup>14</sup>Follow peace with all men and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: <sup>15</sup>Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled.*” “<sup>18</sup>*For you are not come to the*



*mount that might be touched and that burned with fire, nor to blackness and darkness and tempest, <sup>19</sup>And the sound of a trumpet and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: <sup>20</sup>For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: <sup>21</sup>And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake.”*

## Mountain Of Fire

**There is a particular mountain that was burned by fire. This story is about The Children of Israel at Mount Sinai (Exodus 24). When Israel approached God the angel spoke to them in place of God (Acts 7). Moses asked, “*Who shall I say sent me?*” when he was to go to The Pharaoh. The angel said “*Tell them ‘I AM’ sent you.*”**

**There is an angel of God who speaks as *a messenger* or as an ambassador from God. The angels were created to be messengers. No man has seen The Father or heard His voice. However, through the angels, you receive The Word of God. The flames of fire were so glorious that Moses was quaking. *The Scriptures* tell you that there was a consuming fire at that time. That is why the children of Israel did not want to come near God or His messengers. They knew they would be completely consumed.**

**There is another example where Shadrach, Meshach and Abednego were thrown into the fiery furnace, but it didn't burn any of them (Daniel 3). There was a fourth being (a messenger or an angel) with them for their protection. They**

did not burn because they had no sin. They were sinless. They didn't need to burn. Their *faith saved* them!

## God Is Like A Lake Of Fire

Hebrews 12:29 For our God is a consuming fire.

God cannot show Himself to humans. He would burn all who are not *spirit*. When He descends, His *glory* (a consuming fire) scourges every Son He loves.

Isaiah 30:33 For Tophet is ordained of old; yea, for the king it is prepared; he has made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, does kindle it.

If God showed Himself, then everything would be consumed. It works according to the corruptible laws of physics. Tophet is a little village in The Valley of Hinnom, also called The Valley of Fire. This is where they burned their children for Balaam and Molech.

In contrast, God makes brimstone in The Lake of Fire.

Revelation 21:8 But the fearful and unbelieving and the abominable and murderers and whoremongers and sorcerers and idolators and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.

The Greek root for "*brimstone*" is "*Godly*" or "*divine*." "*Brimstone*" is "*Holy Fire*." God's breath created this Godly brimstone (Isaiah 30). Sulfur has always been rec-

ognized as *holy* in much of *the pagan world*. The Lake of Fire came from God and it was created to do what? God was to bring an end to death.

Revelation 20:14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

*The second death will be the end of death. The purpose for The Lake of Fire is to end death. Everyone who is burned is completely purged and goes through a baptism. All come to repentance, as with Lazarus and the rich man (Luke 16:19-31). Fire cleanses and purifies all. What remains is pure spirit, which is the purpose of The Lake of Fire. God, as your Father, chastises everyone so that all can be saved. God truly is love. That is why Christ came into the world (I John 4:14). Christ came to save the world and to end sin and death. Christ will come again, so everyone can be saved! He will either redeem (buy back) or release (or judge) you, showing God's wonderful love and mercy. God allows no one to die. God, by His grace and mercy, saves everyone through His Son, Jesus Christ.*

## Chapter 14

### GOD'S KINGDOM

*The True Gospel is The Good News of The Kingdom of God. This is a spiritual kingdom and the flesh and blood cannot inherit this realm (I Corinthians 15). It is composed of Spirit beings who live in a different universe and in a different dimension. What better goal is there than learning The Good News, becoming a Son of God and being able to live with Him?*

**You will be given a fantastic opportunity to create beyond man's comprehension. You will never need to worry about death. You will not experience pain or suffering. You might ask, "What are Spirit beings going to do in God's kingdom and what is the purpose of The Kingdom of God?" Too many times Christians concentrate on just being saved. No one wants to be thrown into The Lake of Fire. No one wants to burn. When you are concerned about wanting to be saved, you tend not to think about what The Kingdom of God will be like. God is reproducing Himself. He is creating Sons. He is building a family and creating a Godly family government.**

#### Commerce And Prosperity?

**Will there be commerce? Will everyone be prosperous? Will you eat quality foods, live in wondrous homes and work in beautiful offices? Or, will you just play games like you did as a child? What will be the most important**

goal that God sets before you?

Genesis 22:15-18 <sup>15</sup>And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time <sup>16</sup>And said, By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your son, your only son: <sup>17</sup>That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heaven and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.

Abraham and The Abrahamic Covenant form the underlying basis of The Gospel (The Good News of The Kingdom of God). Through an angel, God told Abraham, specifically, what would take place in His *kingdom*. Abraham offered his son, Isaac, as a sacrifice but God intervened and stopped it. An animal was sacrificed in Isaac's place. Here is the account, "<sup>15</sup>*And the angel of the LORD called to Abraham out of heaven the second time.*" The Bible shows you that no one has really talked to God. "Elohim," God Almighty who is The Universal God, talked to Abraham (Genesis 12). But it was really an angel who said, "<sup>16</sup>*By myself have I sworn, said the LORD, for because you have done this thing and have not withheld your son, your only son.*" This angel is speaking in the place of God, as instructed by God. He speaks in God's name and on God's behalf.

It is important for you to remember the concept of duality in *The Bible*. First, you have the physical aspect which is shown through Isaac being offered physically as a type of

Christ. This points to the time when Christ would sacrifice Himself. First, there is the physical *Law of Moses* and then, afterward, The Spiritual Law which will be written in your hearts, “<sup>17</sup>*That in blessing I will bless you and in multiplying I will multiply your seed.*” The sacrifice was made. Now, look at what follows. How many stars are there? How many galaxies are there? It continues with the words, “*as the stars of the heaven, as the sand.*” This is how much God will multiply Abraham's seed.

Has anyone counted all the grains of sand bit by bit? This is the sand “*which is upon the sea shore.*” These are all the seashores of the earth. That promise is followed by “*and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies; <sup>18</sup>And in your seed [speaking of Christ] shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because you have obeyed my voice.*” Until this happens, *The Good News of The Gospel* will not come to pass. When you examine The Lake of Fire, you will find that most people will be thrown into it. This is because of their sins. Until all nations are blessed, the realization of *The Gospel Message* will not be complete. It is very plain. Finally, the mystery or God's puzzle will be revealed in God's *kingdom* (Revelation 10:7).

Ephesians 1:9-10 <sup>9</sup>Having made known to us the mystery of his will, according to his good pleasure which he has purposed in himself: <sup>10</sup>That in the dispensation of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ, both which are in heaven and which are on earth; even in him.

The process starts to unfold. Regarding The Church at Ephesus, Paul says, “<sup>9</sup>*Having made known to us the mys-*

*tery of his will* [it is God's *will* to *save everyone*] *according to his good pleasure* [God will save everyone and this gives Him pleasure] *which he has purposed in himself.*" This is The Word of God, "*In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God and The Word was God*" (John 1:1). He purposed it in Himself. It was all in His *mind*. It was His pleasure to bless all nations. There are so many individuals that you would have to count all the little grains of sand or count all the stars in the heavens.

## Relativity And Time

In His *kingdom* and for His family, there will be no end. This is why it reads, "<sup>10</sup>*in the dispensation of the fullness of times.*" With God, there is no time. In *The New Testament* you read of "*dispensation.*" Another word would be "*ages,*" "*eons*" or even "*time period.*" Realize that *time* is just a series of events. Without events, there is no "*time.*" There must be an event in order to measure from a beginning to an end. When these events transpire, God may gather them together into one. Now, consider that *everyone* is *saved!* This result is part of The Abrahamic Covenant. All nations must be blessed through Christ, "*of the fullness of times he might gather together in one all things in Christ both which are* [where?] *in heaven and which are on earth; even in him*" (Ephesians 1:10). Christ and God will dwell in Christians through His Spirit.

Paul said the same thing. Until this actually happens and people are thrown into The Lake of Fire, this text leads you to only one conclusion. It is that most people must *grow* in order to be able to enter The Kingdom of God (I Corinthians 15:22-23). When the dispensation of the times

are completed, then God will gather everything together into *One* “*In Christ*.” All of mankind must finally come to the place where they are *growing spiritually*. This is God's *purpose*, His pleasure and His *will*. Indeed, it was His *plan* from the beginning.

I Corinthians 15:22 For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive.

You must understand this text in the light of God's *kingdom*; otherwise, you are going to sit there twirling your thumbs and look at each other for eternity.

## More Than Abundance

The Kingdom of God is not just about abundance. That is only one aspect of being *saved*. God reproduces children for a reason. They must become Holy like God, “*For as in Adam all die*” (I Corinthians 15:22). Consequently, all physical human beings will die.

Hebrews 9:27 And as it is appointed to men once to die, but after this the judgment.

The second death is the end of death. That is *the purpose* of The Lake of Fire. It is *the termination of death*, “*death is swallowed up in victory*” (I Corinthians 15:54). There is more, “*Even so in Christ shall all be made alive*” (I Corinthians 15:22). In Ephesians 1 and Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant tells you this is so, “*In your seed* [Christ] *shall all the nations of the earth be blessed*.” You would need to count the sands on the seashore and the stars in heaven to grasp how many children there will be. The



tally is just too numerous to contemplate. Therefore, what is preventing *the Salvation of the world* (I John 4:14)?

Isaiah 59:1-2 <sup>1</sup>Behold, the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear: <sup>2</sup>But your iniquities have separated between you and your God and your sins have hid his face from you, that he will not hear.

What is going to happen in God's *kingdom*? Whenever you say that God is not going to *save* someone, you are falsely thinking that God cannot *save* that person or any other person. Notice, "*the LORD'S hand is not shortened, that it [he] cannot save; neither his ear heavy, that it cannot hear.*" *So God can absolutely save everyone under any condition.*

### An Offended Woman

Once, a woman became upset when she heard the reason why people must go into The Lake of Fire. The reason is because everyone must come to *repentance*. This notion offended her because she felt that her free choice was taken away. You still have free choice, but this is *The Time of Judgement*. As long as you have an option, you have free choice. God will bring you to *repentance in spite of yourself*. God never takes away your free choice. You will stay in The Lake of Fire until you have had enough. The amount of *time* it takes is up to you. Consider the process of breaking a wild horse. Some horses must have their independent spirit broken but they still have a choice (Matthew 5:25-26). So, you will endure the heat.

A child hears his mother tell him not to touch the hot

stove, but he forgets and touches it. The child, suddenly, has to pay a penalty. Quickly, he stops touching it. Like the child touching the hot stove, you make the choice as to how long you want to stay in *the fire*. Those thrown into The Lake of Fire will have the choice to repent or else continue to burn. Eventually, on an individual basis, in your own time and in your own way, you will say "*it is enough.*" It will depend upon how *hard* your heart is. Your entire carnal nature is found in the flesh and it must be burned up (Matthew 5:30).

What about the people, today, who ruin their lives with drugs, alcohol or smoking? They become addicted. When do they quit? Usually, they quit when it hurts too much. It is called *bottoming out*. They almost overdose. If they drink too much, they may kill someone while driving. If they smoke, they get an illness such as throat or lung cancer.

## Revelation 21

You can learn about *the new heaven* and *new earth* by focusing on Jerusalem (Revelation 21). However, you won't learn much about the rest of the world. The focus is completely upon New Jerusalem. The rest of *the new earth* must be healed (Revelation 22:2). There must be something special about New Jerusalem in reference to the time of *the new heaven* and *the new earth*. It is very significant to the remainder of the world. New Jerusalem is where God chose to place His name. He, Himself, will reside there at the time of *the new heaven*. It is all about Jerusalem. Take the little puzzle pieces from *The Old Testament* and the little pieces from *The New Testament* and

put them together to understand New Jerusalem. Only those who are written in *The Lamb's Book of Life* will live in New Jerusalem in The Kingdom of God.

Who is in *The Lamb's Book of Life*? It contains only those who are part of The Wedding and The Guests. No one else is in there (Revelation 21:24). All the other nations are scattered throughout the rest of the earth. All are *Spirit beings* at this time, as they have been changed (I Corinthians 15:54-55).

### Size Of Future Jerusalem

New Jerusalem is 1,500 miles in each direction which is an approximate distance from Dallas to New York City. It is also four square. Can you imagine a city that is 1,500 miles in each direction? When you first study The Kingdom of God, you will have a totally different view of *the new heaven and new earth*.

A view from The Hubble Telescope reveals the magnificence and beauty of the colors displayed in the universe. Today, when astronauts go into space and look down, they are awed at the beauty of this planet. This view is nothing but a shadow of the wondrous beauty that God has in store for you. Read Revelation 19 through 22 for a greater understanding of New Jerusalem.

Isaiah 60:1-3 <sup>1</sup>Arise, shine; for your light is come and the glory of the LORD is risen upon you. <sup>2</sup>For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon you and his glory shall be seen upon you. <sup>3</sup>And the Gentiles shall

come to your light and kings to the brightness of your rising.

God's *purpose and pleasure is to bring everyone to Christ*. He says, "<sup>1</sup>*Arise, shine; for your light is come and the glory of the LORD is risen upon you.*" "*Arise and shine*" refers to "*The Resurrection.*" What is The Glory of The LORD? The Israelites knew that God's *presence* was in The Holy Place until 70 A.D. when Titus came and destroyed everything.

### Glory Departed The Temple

The Glory of God had already departed. Since *the temple* was going to be destroyed, God was not actually present. The Israelites knew The Shekinah was *not a being* but rather The Essence of God (The Shekinah will be discussed in more detail later on). They knew it was God's *Spirit, energy and glory*. (Reread Chapter 3 'Who Is God?').

You know God is made of *light*. When light energy is in motion, the photons are in a constant state of self-perpetuation. As light energy moves, it creates the color spectrum (a rainbow). Looking at God – face-to-face – is not possible. Why not? Because you would burn up! His face is as white as the sun and His body glows down to the burnished brass of His feet. Remember, God actually glows! All this essence is The Glory of God.

God has Seven Spirits before His *throne*. When God projects Himself, He is *All and In All*. Everything that is, today and in the future, will be God. When *The Bible* declares the, "<sup>1</sup>*glory of the LORD is risen upon you,*" it is a reference about *The Shekinah*. This *glory* is magnifying itself

with all its presence. God has eyes, ears, arms and legs within this energy and light. You look like God because He made you like Him. The essence and being of God is going to cover the whole *new earth*. So, no sun or moon is needed because God's *glory* is there. His Son is an exact duplicate.

*“<sup>2</sup>For behold, the darkness shall cover the earth and gross darkness the people: but the LORD shall arise upon you and his glory shall be seen upon you. <sup>3</sup>And the Gentiles [here is The Abrahamic Covenant] shall come to your light and kings to the brightness of your rising.”* The light and brightness is for all the world. This *light* brings *the truth of Salvation*. Light makes it possible for people to see Christ, *The Light* and *The Truth Bringer*.

## The End Of Violence

Isaiah 60:18 Violence shall no more be heard in your land, wasting nor destruction within your borders; but you shall call your walls Salvation and your gates Praise.

From Isaiah 58 all the way to the end of *Isaiah*, there is an intermittent story-flow between *the new heaven* and *new earth*. This is shown in the context of The Millennium. Do not confuse the two. In some instances, God declares that He will make a *new heaven* and *new earth* and then, suddenly, He changes the subject. He does the same in *Revelation*. Don't get confused by this. At times, God talks about *the resurrection*. He says, *“I am making a new heaven and new earth.”* Then He tells you the process which reveals His *plan*. Many times Christians confuse

the process. Now in New Jerusalem, when speaking about the wall He says, "*but you shall call your walls Salvation and your gates Praise.*"

It is very important to know who will be permitted to go through *the gates*. In this "*world tomorrow*," which is The Kingdom of God, what is *the purpose of the gates*? You might ask, "*What is the purpose of the walls of this city?*"

Isaiah 62:1-4 <sup>1</sup>For Zion's sake will I not hold my peace and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the righteousness thereof go forth as brightness and the salvation thereof as a lamp that burns. <sup>2</sup>And the Gentiles shall see your righteousness and all kings your glory: and you shall be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name. <sup>3</sup>You shall also be a crown of glory in the hand of the LORD and a royal diadem in the hand of your God. <sup>4</sup>You shall no more be termed Forsaken; neither shall your land any more be termed Desolate: but you shall be called Hephzibah and your land Beulah; for the LORD delights in you and your land shall be married.

This is the beginning of the discourse about Jerusalem. The process of *Salvation* continues. There is the *brightness*. The *purpose* of New Jerusalem is to be a *light for Salvation*. It will continue until *righteousness* goes forth. New Jerusalem's *righteousness* is Zion's *righteousness*.

"<sup>2</sup>*And all kings [will see] your glory: and you shall be called by a new name, which the mouth of the LORD shall name.*" When there is a *new heaven* and *new earth*, they will receive a new name (Revelation 22).

This "*Crown of Glory*" means "*God's presence.*" This text refers to the responsibility that everyone will have. This will be during God's *kingdom* when it becomes a *new heaven* and a *new earth*. It will be a city of delight "*and your land shall be married.*" Hephzibah and Beulah will be *one* (Isaiah 62:4). The land, New Jerusalem and the people will be *One*. They will be married as *One* with God through His *glory, essence* and *presence*. These little pieces of the puzzle are important. If you don't follow carefully, then you will misunderstand what *The Bible* is revealing to you.

## Reward Of The Seven Churches

Revelation 1:3 Blessed is he that reads and they that hear the words of this prophecy and keep those things which are written therein: for the time is at hand.

Who will tell you these things? You will be blessed if you read and observe the statements made in this prophecy. All nations are blessed (Genesis 22). Through an angel, Christ revealed to John things that would come to pass. This letter was written to The Seven Churches (Revelation 1 through Revelation 22).

Revelation 2:1-4 <sup>1</sup>To the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things said he that holds the seven stars in his right hand, who walks in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; <sup>2</sup>I know your works and your labour and your patience and how you can not bear them which are evil: and you have tried them which say they are apostles and are not and have found them liars: <sup>3</sup>And have borne and have patience and for my

name's sake have laboured and have not fainted.

<sup>4</sup>Nevertheless I have somewhat against you, because you have left your first love.

What does John tell The Seven Churches? The seven golden candlesticks are The Seven Churches. The stars are the seven angels over The Seven Churches. He knows how they are doing in the process of overcoming. These people are not yet perfected. The big problem is that they have "*left their first love.*" Jesus Christ was their first Love.

### Ephesians And Christology

The Ephesian Church lost sight of The Messiah in the end and turned to paganism (in Christ's name). They argued Christology. They started to develop *the trinity* and, by 400 A.D., *the churches* of the world all believed there were three gods. It was not just one, but three gods! They lost their first love, which was Jesus. They argued whether Christ was a Son of God or God as a second Godly being. They lost *the truth*.

Revelation 2:7 He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God.

You are being told about the *new heaven* and *new earth*. When you are *saved*, in God's *kingdom*, everyone will eat of The Tree of Life. Why do you need The Tree of Life if you already have *Salvation*? If you are already *Spirit* and are *saved*, why is The Tree of Life there? As a *Spirit being*, you will eat from The Tree of Life, "*which is in the midst of*



***the paradise of God.***” This is The Kingdom of God in New Jerusalem. Is New Jerusalem *paradise* or *The Garden of Eden*? New Jerusalem is The New Garden of Eden. In fact, it is a duplicate of God's *temple*. You are going to be Priests and Kings or The Bride where you will dwell with your Husband.

## Court Of Israel

Now, try to understand The Court of Israel. Outside this *court*, there is The Court of The Gentiles. The Groom is there along with The Bride and The Gentiles. The Israelites are there in New Jerusalem. Unless they are written in *The Lamb's Book of Life*, they cannot come into the city or *The Temple of God*. In order to enter New Jerusalem, one must experience a change of nature. God's *Ten Commandments* must be written in their hearts. Repentance will not be enough (Revelation 22:14).

I Corinthians 13:12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

You are in New Jerusalem. God, The Father is there with your Husband, Jesus Christ. At that time you will be able to see God face-to-face. You are now putting another piece of the puzzle together.

Revelation 2:10 Fear none of those things which you shall suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that you may be tried; and you shall have tribulation ten days: be you faithful to death and I will give you a crown of life.

**They have a right to eat from The Tree of Life and to live in New Jerusalem. The Church in Smyrna is a *church* that has gone through persecution and has been tried. The only promise given is that they will have life and they will be *royalty*. The seed of Satan is there (Revelation 2:12-13). They are told that they are making a religion out of Christianity instead of living it (a way of life).**

**Revelation 2:14 But I have a few things against you, because you have there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumbling block before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed to idols and to commit fornication.**

**All of this was over money! Remember the wild ass that spoke? This is a group of people trying to make a business out of God's *church* (John 2:16).**

**Revelation 2:17-18 <sup>17</sup>He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches; To him that overcomes will I give to eat of the hidden manna and will give him a white stone and in the stone a new name written, which no man knows saving he that receives it. <sup>18</sup>And to the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things said the Son of God, who has his eyes like to a flame of fire and his feet are like fine brass.**

## **Hidden Manna**

**The hidden *manna* refers to the fact that Christ said you must eat His *body*. The white stone relates to you being a building block in New Jerusalem. *The Book of Revelation* is symbolic. In reality, New Jerusalem does not have**

a literal wall but is composed of The Apostles of God and Christians (Isaiah 26:1). The *wall is Salvation*. God has no need for *walls*. Jerusalem will be rebuilt during the time of Christ's thousand-year reign. It will have no walls. God is *the protector and the defender*.

These *walls* are only symbolic. This is purely a *spiritual message*. The *wall* is The Bride who offers *Salvation* to her children. She is The Mother (Ephesians 2:20-21 and Galatians 3:26). God talks about His Seven Churches and the people following the ways of Jezebel (Easter and Christmas). He still calls them His *church*. Through the ages, many in God's *churches* have been sinning and following Satan's pagan ways. However, they will pay the penalty with many stripes.

Revelation 2:26-28 <sup>26</sup>And he that overcomes and keeps my works to the end, to him will I give power over the nations: <sup>27</sup>And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. <sup>28</sup>And I will give him the morning star.

So, you will be *a ruler* over these other nations. "*The Morning Star*" is Jesus Christ (Revelation 22).

Revelation 3:1 And to the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things said he that has the seven Spirits of God and the seven stars; I know your works, that you have a name that you lived and art dead.

Revelation 3:4-5 <sup>4</sup>You have a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall

walk with me in white: for they are worthy. <sup>5</sup>He that overcomes, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father and before his angels.

Sardis isn't very diligent. You shouldn't run around deciding which church is The Church of God. Those who have God's *spirit* are in His *church* and only He knows who they are.

## Tree Of Life

Only a few will become The Bride of Christ. Christ is The Tree of Life (John 15:1-8). Those in Sardis, who remain *faithful* and overcome, will be in New Jerusalem. They are in *The Book of Life* as Christ's Bride or The Guests.

Revelation 3:7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things said he that is holy, he that is true, he that has the key of David, he that opens and no man shuts; and shuts and no man opens.

Revelation 3:12 Him that overcomes will I make a pillar in the temple of my God and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name.

Now, you see the advantage of diligence, “<sup>12</sup>Him that overcomes will I make a pillar [support] in the temple of my God.” There is no *temple* in New Jerusalem. God and

Christ, His Son, are *the temple*. The Philadelphians who come into *the kingdom* support that “*temple*” (which is God and Christ). That is why they are likened to pillars. The next step is, “*he shall go no more out* [that is where He will live] *and I will write upon him the name of my God and the name of the city of my God which is new Jerusalem which comes down out of heaven from my God.*”

So, those in The Philadelphia Elect are going to be supports for *the temple*. They are not only “*the wall*” (leaders), but they are, literally, *the support for the temple*. They have a great responsibility.

### Purpose Of The Wall

Remember, *the purpose of the wall is Salvation. Spiritual growth continues in God's kingdom. That is the point.*

Revelation 3:18 I counsel you to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed and that the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see.

The Laodiceans are the ones who say that they, *only*, have *the truth*. Here is what Christ tells them, “<sup>18</sup>*I counsel you to buy of me [what?] gold tried in the fire.*” They will have to go into The Lake of Fire. Anyone who runs around thinking they have all of *the truth*, will burn. This is a major warning to everyone. No one has all of *the truth* of God. Everyone needs to continue to grow. For those claiming to be the ones who have *The Only Truth* of God, Christ says, “*buy of me gold tried in the fire.*”

## Streets Of Gold

The streets of New Jerusalem are made of *gold*. Remember, *gold* can be refined. If you go into *the fire*, your *life* is refined. You come out like *gold – eternal, tried and tested*. “<sup>18</sup>*That you may be rich; and white raiment, that you may be clothed and that the shame of your nakedness do not appear; and anoint your eyes with eye salve, that you may see*” (I Corinthians 3).

Now, put this together. New Jerusalem is the most critical area in The New Heaven and New Earth. It is the place where God will dwell. His *elect* will be The Bride who is going to marry His Son, and they are going to be busy *growing spiritually* and giving *Salvation*. Everyone will spend *eternity* discovering the riches in Christ and God. You will see God as He is. *God is a Creator and He will continue to create eternally*. You, too, will create when you are *saved*. This occurs as you continue to grow in the riches of Christ and God. The *righteous* who are *saved* continue to produce *The Fruit of Righteousness*.

Proverbs 11:30 The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that wins souls is wise.

The Tree of Life produces fruit every month. What fruit is it? The answer is, “<sup>30</sup>*The fruit of the righteous [what?] is a tree of life.*” So the fruit that is produced by The Tree of Life is *righteousness*. “*And he that wins souls is wise.*” The Tree of Life is in New Jerusalem. You will then have the Godly creative power of *righteousness*.

I Corinthians 15:50 Now this I say, brethren, that

flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God;  
neither does corruption inherit incorruption.

Only *Spirit beings* can be in God's *kingdom*. So, those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are changed into *Spirit beings*. They are not required to know *the whole truth*. Those who are thrown into The Lake of Fire are those who refused to repent and follow God in their lifetime.

### Fruits Of Restricted Growth

Christians, who grew to a certain place and then were afraid, too lazy or too satisfied to continue to grow, will have to go into The Lake of Fire. If you say, "*I have all the truth that I need or I like what I am doing now,*" then you will burn (Luke 12:47).

I Corinthians 15:54-56 <sup>54</sup>So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. <sup>55</sup>O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory? <sup>56</sup>The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law.

Since The LORD's hand is not short, what keeps God from saving more people? Sin keeps God from *hearing* your prayers and *saving* you. When these people become ashes, are they resurrected? They will not be resurrected, rather, they will just change into *Spirit*. This is because it says, "*shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory.*"

Why is this? It is because there is no more death, “<sup>55</sup>*O death, where is your sting? O grave, where is your victory?* <sup>56</sup>*The sting of death is sin* [sin was what held God back from saving you. But now, it is gone. This leaves the thought that] *the strength of sin is the law.*” That is very plain and simple. The strength of sin is *The Law*. Also, you could say that *The Law* is the strength of sin. *The Law* is the gauge that tells you how bad or how sinful you are.

This should make you repent and when you do, God's *Spirit* can write His Laws in your heart and mind. At this juncture, no one sins since death no longer exists. *The Law* no longer applies, so sin dies and everyone is *saved*.

Matthew 5:18 For verily I say to you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.

*The Law* remains as a way to reveal sin to those who are still unrepentant, “<sup>18</sup>*one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till* [when? *heaven and earth pass*] *all be fulfilled.*” Why does *The Law* stop? If everyone has repented, then there is no need for *The Law*. From this point on, *The Law* is *written in your heart*.

## The Missing Ingredient

There is one thing missing in this paradise – The Garden of Eden. There is no Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil. There is no Satan and no more testing. The time of trial is over. God makes *all* things new.

Revelation 19:7 Let us be glad and rejoice and give



honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.

Revelation 19:9 And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God.

*The Fruit of Righteousness is The Tree of Life. “<sup>7</sup>Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him [this honor is not to Christ, but to God, The Father] for the marriage of the Lamb is come and his wife has made herself ready.”* This is The Apostle John's letter to The Seven Churches. John was an elderly man when he received this revelation. It was when nearly all *the churches* were following Rome and *the churches* in Greece were following Constantinople.

Here is the message, “<sup>9</sup>*And he said to me, Write, Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he said to me, These are the true sayings of God.*” You will not go into The Lake of Fire. You will live in New Jerusalem.

Revelation 21:1-6 <sup>1</sup>And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. <sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. <sup>3</sup>And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God. <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes;

and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. <sup>5</sup>And he that sat on the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely.

Read Revelation 21 carefully because it can get tricky. This statement about *the new heaven* refers to God's *kingdom* and The Abrahamic Covenant. There will be no more oceans. Can you imagine the single landmass? The city will be 1,500 miles in every direction with no oceans. Five-sixths of the earth today is filled with water while only one sixth is land. Now reverse the ratio. There are no oceans. One city is 1,500 miles square. This *new earth* will be huge, "<sup>2</sup>And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband."

New Jerusalem is The Bride with Jesus as a Groom and her Husband. Then a great voice said, "*Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men and he will dwell with them and they shall be his people and God himself shall be with them and be their God.*" <sup>4</sup>And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes." He will be there to straighten everything out. "*There shall be no more death* [why is death gone? It is because there is no Law, no sin and consequently, no death. You now are made of *light* and *spirit*] *for the former things are passed away.*" The whole universe, according to the laws of physics, no longer exists.

## Living in A New Dimension

*You will be living in a new dimension. It will be in a new age and a new universe. The latest astronomers and scientists say there is a fifth dimension and perhaps a sixth, seventh and eighth dimension! In that light – read, “<sup>5</sup>And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new.”* Things keep getting newer and better as growth continues unabated.

The Lake of Fire will be an ending. The Garden of Eden will be a new beginning. The process of *making all things new* is a new beginning. In *Isaiah*, New Jerusalem is called *Paradise* or *The Garden of Eden*. You will start off in God's *kingdom* where Adam and Eve began. Now, the children who are outside The Garden of God (New Jerusalem) can grow *spiritually*. Alpha and Omega is the beginning and end. Christ *saved* all who were lost from The Garden of Eden (Matthew 18:11). “*I will give to him that is athirst of the fountain of water of life freely.*”

*Spiritual growth* will take place in The New Heaven and New Earth. God's original Sabbath *rest* comes to pass (Hebrews 4:9). God says, “*I make all things new.*” This is God's *rest*. This is The Sabbath *rest* that was lost.

## Back To Genesis

*The new heaven and new earth* is the genesis of when Adam and Eve sinned. This is a new beginning. It begins when Adam and Eve are shown the exit from The Garden (Revelation 22). It was a perfect plan of creation that has not happened. Adam is the husband and the first type of

Christ. Eve, his Bride, could have had their progeny in *Paradise*, as well.

The second Adam was Christ (I Corinthians 15). Under Adam, everybody ended up *dying*. With Christ everyone will end up *living*. What will you do in The Kingdom of God? You are to *create Salvation*. *Spiritual growth* continues *eternally*. Everyone keeps *growing*. *You will help people grow spiritually*. How many people need to *grow spiritually*? There are billions and billions of individuals. Only a few, The Bride and The Guests, are *saved* prior to the masses, who are *saved* later (Matthew 7:13-14).

When you read, "*the fountain of the water of life*," do you wonder who should be *saved*? If there is a *new heaven* and a *new earth*, then who needs a Tree of Life or The Waters of Life? All *Spirit beings* will continue to grow, so they will want and need The Waters of Life. In *Proverbs*, it states that *righteousness* is like The Tree of Life. The only people who will be allowed to eat from The Tree of Life will be those who go into New Jerusalem. Only those who live in New Jerusalem will be permitted to go in through the gates to partake of The Tree of Life. Once Christians become The Bride of Christ, they will rule The Nations of The World. Then, what remains to be done?

## Infinite Growth

You must keep growing in *righteousness*. You must have *agapè* (God's nature). God will also keep growing and creating. There will be infinite growth. God keeps being *All and In All*. God keeps creating and so will you. When God first began implementing His *plan*, nothing else existed

but God. Since then, God has been reproducing Himself. Why is this? It is because that is the most precious gift He can ever give to you! So, if He is reproducing Himself, then He is going to be *All and In All*. God is giving of Himself and keeps growing and expanding.

Deuteronomy 21:15-17 <sup>15</sup>If a man have two wives, one beloved and another hated and they have born him children, both the beloved and the hated; and if the firstborn son be hers that was hated: <sup>16</sup>Then it shall be, when he makes his sons to inherit that which he has, that he may not make the son of the beloved firstborn before the son of the hated, which is indeed the firstborn: <sup>17</sup>But he shall acknowledge the son of the hated for the firstborn, by giving him a double portion of all that he has: for he is the beginning of his strength; the right of the firstborn is his.

The firstborn son is discussed here. He must be accepted as firstborn – even though he is from the wife who is not loved. Why was it proper for him to have two wives? He did own them. This is Satan's system of marriage. Christ came to *redeem* you from Satan's system. How much are you supposed to give to the firstborn? He receives twice as much as the rest of the family, "*of all that he has: for he is the beginning of his strength.*"

## Right Of The Firstborn

Why is The Word of God so important? Why is Jesus Christ so vital? It is because He is The Firstborn Son of God and the beginning of all His strength, "*the right of the firstborn is his.*" Through Christ, you will inherit all

things. When God reproduces Himself through His Son, He is passing on His strength. Christ, who inherited all things, passes it on to His Bride, His *church*. God is growing. Christ is growing. The Bride is growing. The Guests are growing. Who is left? The ones that remain are the ones who are thrown into The Lake of Fire!

Revelation 21:7 He that overcomes shall inherit all things; and I will be his God and he shall be my son.

It is very important to have *a right* to The Tree of Life so you can keep growing in *righteousness*. When you overcome, you become God's Son. God keeps reproducing Himself because it is all about family. Is it any wonder that Satan's biggest desire is to get rid of families?

Revelation 21:9-15 <sup>9</sup>And there came to me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues and talked with me, saying, Come hither, I will show you the Bride, the Lamb's wife. <sup>10</sup>And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain and showed me that great city, the holy Jerusalem, descending out of heaven from God. <sup>11</sup>Having the glory of God: and her light was like to a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone, clear as crystal; <sup>12</sup>And had a wall great and high and had twelve gates and at the gates twelve angels and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: <sup>13</sup>On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. <sup>14</sup>And the wall of the city had twelve foundations and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. <sup>15</sup>And he

that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city and the gates thereof and the wall thereof.

A great mountain will be found near this great city. Perhaps, it will be seven mountains (just like in Jerusalem)! *The City is The Lamb's Wife*. Christ said that He would go to prepare a place for you. Everyone will love their homes because Christ will be the architect and decorator, “<sup>11</sup>*Having the glory of God.*” Do you understand what that *glory* is? The entire essence, beauty and power of what God is can be found within the city itself. Movies have been made depicting this city. The Emerald City in ‘*The Wizard Of Oz*’ is one example.

Revelation 21:11 *Having the glory of God: and her light was like to a stone most precious, even like a jasper stone.*

Jasper is a yellow-red color, so The Bride and her garment exudes this light yellow-red aura. Everyone will look different but have the same DNA. There will be a family resemblance with the same *essence*.

You will be composed of *The Glory of God*. However, all of you will have different arrangements from the various illuminating, precious stones.

## God's Jewels

Malachi 3:17 *And they shall be mine, said the LORD of hosts, in that day when I make up my jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spares his own son that serves him.*

God says He will “<sup>17</sup>*make up my jewels,*” just as you feel your new baby is a precious jewel. In a similiar manner, God sees you as His precious jewel. When *the creation* becomes *righteous* with *glory*, everyone will be beautiful but different. Now, regarding the other elements of the city, “<sup>11</sup>*clear as crystal;* <sup>12</sup>*And had a wall great and high and had twelve gates and at the gates twelve angels and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel.*”

## Through The Gates

The only way you can enter God's *kingdom* is through *the gates* which are called “*praise.*” Israel will now be *praised*. Israel was to be a *witness* so that other nations would see God's *glory*. They almost achieved it in *Solomon's time* but, ultimately, failed. Israel will complete that job in the future. They will be *The Praise of The Kingdom*. Then there is the matter of the orientation of *the gates*, “<sup>13</sup>*On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates.* <sup>14</sup>*And the wall of the city had twelve foundations and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb.*” First, Christ is *The Chief Cornerstone*. Next, the foundation is composed of *The Twelve Apostles*. Then, there is *The Wall of Salvation*. Measurement comes next with, “<sup>15</sup>*he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city.*” The *Bride* (the church) is compared to *The Walls of Salvation*. This is *The Mother of Everyone* (Eve).

Revelation 21:18 And the building of the wall of it was of jasper: and the city was pure gold, like clear glass.



When Christ is on His *throne*, He looks like jasper. Then, The Bride looks like Christ, her Husband. When some people are married for years and years, they start to look like each other. This is no exception. So, the wall is composed of jasper. When you first see the walls, they all look the same. They are The Bride. *The Bride is Salvation* and her job will be to give *Salvation*.

Galatians 4:22-26 <sup>22</sup>For it is written, that Abraham had two sons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a free woman. <sup>23</sup>But he who was of the bondwoman was born after the flesh; but he of the free woman was by promise. <sup>24</sup>Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage, which is Agar. <sup>25</sup>For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia and answers to Jerusalem which now is and is in bondage with her children. <sup>26</sup>But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

This text is about a human attempting to have a child. However, there is a problem, “<sup>23</sup>*of the free woman was by promise* [The Abrahamic Promise]. <sup>24</sup>*Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants.*” The Two Covenants are *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*. This is the written *Law of Moses*.

## Spirit Of The Law

The Spirit of *The Law* is written in your hearts, “*the one from the mount Sinai, which genders to bondage.*” During Israel's time in slavery, whenever they sinned, they had to make offerings. The subject now shifts to Hagar, “<sup>25</sup>*For*

*this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabi, and answers to Jerusalem which now is [Paul's time] and is in bondage with her children."*

The text culminates in the statement, "<sup>26</sup>*But Jerusalem which is above [New Jerusalem] is free, which is the mother of us all.*" Eve was The Mother of all living. New Jerusalem, or that which comes down, is The Church (your Salvation). New Jerusalem is The Mother of *everyone*. In The Kingdom of God, The Marriage takes place. This is The Feast or the so-called Jubilee Year. Then, everyone will be *released!* Those thrown into The Lake of Fire are released from death and sin. There is no more Law. When *The Law* is gone, there is no sin. Everyone will grow because they have *the right heart*. So now, The Husband, The Bride and The Guests have the job of bringing *Salvation* to all the others. Salvation will just be the beginning.

## Life In The Garden

What ended in *The Garden*, will then continue. Everyone in *The Garden* will be dressing it and keeping it as God directs. The children of Cain need to *grow spiritually*. They will have repented in The Lake of Fire but need God's Law to be in their hearts (Revelation 22:14). They are outside of The Garden and Eden. They are in The Land of Nod, just like Cain. The Kingdom of God is in the process of *saving everyone*. It is a new beginning. It is called The New Garden of Eden. It is The New Paradise.

Revelation 21:19-21 <sup>19</sup>And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of precious stone. The first foundation was jasper; the

second, sapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx; the sixth, sardius; the seventh, chrysolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chrysoprasus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyst. <sup>21</sup>And the twelve gates were twelve pearls; every several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold, as it were transparent glass.

The Twelve Apostles are *the foundation*. Each stone has its own qualities. It could be said that “*the wall*” is “*The Church*” and “*the foundation*” is “*The Apostles*.”

## 12 Foundation Colors

The stones each have their own color, “*The first foundation was jasper; the second, sapphire [blue]; the third, a chalcedony [sky blue like the heavens]; the fourth, an emerald [green]; <sup>20</sup>The fifth, sardonyx [ruby red]; the sixth, sardius [a lighter red]; the seventh, chrysolite [a yellow gold]; the eighth, beryl [ocean green]; the ninth, a topaz [as a light green spring grass]; the tenth, a chrysoprasus [violet]; the eleventh, a jacinth [light red]; the twelfth, an amethyst [purple].*” Each Apostle is part of the foundation and each has its own color. This means that each and every one of you will look different. You will be made of the same substance as God, which is *spirit* and *fire*, and radiates a great *light*. However, each will have separate garments and a distinctive appearance.

Now to, “<sup>21</sup>*And the twelve gates [Israel is the witness.] were twelve pearls.*” (So The Israelites will look distinctly different). Israel is God's eternal witness of praise, “*every*

*several gate was of one pearl: and the street of the city was pure gold [tested], as it were transparent glass*" (Revelation 21:21). Then, "*he showed me a pure river of water of life*" (Revelation 22:1). What is this "*river*" and why is it called **The Water of Life?**

**John 7:37-39** <sup>37</sup>In the last day, that great day of the feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come to me and drink. <sup>38</sup>He that believes on me, as the scripture has said, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water. <sup>39</sup>(But this spoke he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet glorified).

**The Eighth Day is the greatest day of all and is called The Jubilee. This is God's rest (The New Heaven and The New Earth). This is when God sets out to make sure that He saves everyone. Each person must be saved in his/her own order. Today, no one can come to The Father except through The Son. This text is about The Water of Life which is God's Holy Spirit going out to all the nations.**

**Revelation 21:24** And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

**What is this announcement all about? It concerns *spiritual growth*. Note that *the nations will be saved*. The leaders (kings) of those nations will bring an offering to The Lord.**

**Revelation 22:1-2** <sup>1</sup>And he showed me a pure river

of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations.

The message of the pure flowing waters relates to God's *Spirit* coming directly from Him. The Firstborn represents the beginning of *God's strength*. Then, "<sup>2</sup>*In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the Tree of Life.*" Do you need a Tree of Life if you have *Eternal Life*? The Tree of Life helps you continue to grow in *righteousness* (Revelation 22:14).

So, everyone will keep eating from The Tree of Life. Christ explains that any person who overcomes has a right to eat of The Tree of Life. However, there will be those who cannot eat from this Tree of Life, because they cannot come into the city. They cannot obtain access to The Tree of Life in the city until they *spiritually grow to maturity*.

## Last Great Day

During The Last Great Day, everyone who wants to drink should come to this, "<sup>2</sup>*In the midst of the street of it and on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits.*" The number 12 indicates *divine government*. This passage is about *righteousness for God's government*. A new *Fruit of Righteousness* will be available *each of the twelve months*. The people in the city have a right to go through *the gates* because their names are in *The Book of Life*. They are the ones who eat from

**The Tree of Life.** Now, The River of The Waters is God's Holy Spirit which goes out into all nations. The last few chapters of *Ezekiel* tell you about this great river coming out of Jerusalem. When it first starts, it goes up to your ankles, then your knees, then to your thighs, then to your hips and, pretty soon, it reaches your head. It gets so deep that it covers the whole earth. This passage is about God's *Spirit*.

John 15:1-4 <sup>1</sup>I am the true vine and my Father is the husbandman. <sup>2</sup>Every branch in me that bears not fruit he takes away: and every branch that bears fruit, he purges it, that it may bring forth more fruit. <sup>3</sup>Now you are clean through the word which I have spoken to you. <sup>4</sup>Abide in me and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can you, except you abide in me.

Christ said He was The True Vine. So what is The Tree of Life? It is Christ, who has "*fruit of itself.*" Then, He declares that they must abide in Him. They abide "*In Christ.*" The Bride, The Husband and The Father keep producing fruit.

## Identifying The Tree

Remember, Christ says, "*You shall know a tree by its fruit.*" Good fruit cannot come from a bad tree. Bad fruit only comes from a bad tree. The Tree of Life is Christ. The water coming out of it is God's *Spirit* which renews the whole earth.

Revelation 22:2-6 <sup>2</sup>In the midst of the street of it and

on either side of the river was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing of the nations. <sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse: but the throne of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and his servants shall serve him: <sup>4</sup>And they shall see his face; and his name shall be in their foreheads. <sup>5</sup>And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. <sup>6</sup>And he said to me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to show his servants the things which must shortly be done.

The fruit comes forth each and every month. This is important because it shows that time is measured in months. There is a certain continuity from the former world. Then, *“the leaves of the tree were for the healing [restoring] of the nations.”* The nations, who are already *saved* (or *repentant*), are restoring those who went through The Lake of Fire. The *leaves* indicate that there is *sprouting* and the green leaves keep growing. These are not old dried leaves. The leaves are a symbol of new growth going to the nations through The River of Waters or God's *Spirit*, *“<sup>3</sup>And there shall be no more curse.”* They cannot be cursed anymore because they have repented. Death has vanquished. The fire did the trick. Now, they must *grow spiritually*.

## New Jerusalem

New Jerusalem is married. She is The Mother of *everyone*. Eve was *The Mother of All*. Now, all nations will be

blessed and multiplied as the sands of the sea and the stars of heaven (Genesis 22, The Abrahamic Covenant). Now, to an exciting time when, *“the Lord God gives them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever.”* This is a *Rulership of Salvation* that makes all things better. No one hurts anyone. Everyone performs good acts for everyone else, *“<sup>6</sup>And he said to me, These sayings are faithful and true: and the Lord God of the holy prophets sent his angel to show to his servants the things which must shortly be done.”* These warnings are given to The Seven Churches.

Revelation 22:7-12 <sup>7</sup>Behold, I come quickly: blessed is he that keeps the sayings of the prophecy of this book. <sup>8</sup>And I John saw these things and heard them. And when I had heard and seen, I fell down to worship before the feet of the angel which showed me these things. <sup>9</sup>Then said he to me, See you do it not: for I am your fellow servant and of your brethren the prophets and of them which keep the sayings of this book: worship God. <sup>10</sup>And he said to me, Seal not the sayings of the prophecy of this book: for the time is at hand. <sup>11</sup>He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still: and he that is righteous, let him be righteous still: and he that is holy, let him be holy still. <sup>12</sup>And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.

This is the time of *The Return* of Christ. Do not hide the words of this prophecy but, rather, proclaim them. This is within John's *time frame*. Of course, there will be problems, *“<sup>11</sup>He that is unjust, let him be unjust still: and he which is filthy, let him be filthy still* [Salvation has nothing



to do with The Holy Days. They were just a shadow of things to come. So here is the major statement] *<sup>12</sup>And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.*"

**Everyone concentrates on how to avoid The Lake of Fire. They only want to be *saved*. They do not realize that they need to be like God. You must become an example of Christ because it will determine what you will be doing in *the kingdom*. Salvation is *free*. The Gift of Life is *free* but you have to earn what you will be doing in The Kingdom of God. It will be according to the reward you earned by doing good works in this life (the poor, the widows and orphans). It's all up to you.**

Revelation 22:13-17 <sup>13</sup>I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. <sup>14</sup>Blessed are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life and may enter in through the gates into the city. <sup>15</sup>For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie. <sup>16</sup>I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David and the bright and morning star. <sup>17</sup>And the Spirit and the Bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.

## **“Doing” The Commandments**

**How do you *keep His commandments*? You keep them by having His Laws written in your heart! You *do The***

*Commandments* better than those written on stone. This is God's righteousness, not yours. You will not covet anything. You won't even think of coveting anything because it would, literally, be against your nature. You would never think about stealing because you wouldn't want to harm your neighbor. You could not kill because you love your neighbor. Are you keeping *The Commandments*?

What were *the two requirements* that Christ mandated for Eternal Life? Remember what happened when *the rich man* came and said, "What must I do?" Christ said, "keep *the commandments*." The rich man answered that he always kept *The Commandments*. Then he asked, "what do I lack?" Jesus said, "Give your riches to the poor." Sacrifice yourself. The rich man lacked *agàpè love*.

Later, at the home of one of the chief tax collectors, the same question was asked. The tax collector, also, answered that he kept *The Commandments* and gave half of everything he earned to the poor. Christ told him that *Salvation* had come to his house. There are no Holy Days, no taking unleavened bread out of the house, no keeping Christmas, Easter or Halloween. When you keep *The Commandments* of God by nature, you have a *right* to The Tree of Life and you may enter in through *the gates* to the city. How do the people who are thrown into The Lake of Fire get into the city? They are healed by having God's Laws written in their hearts and their minds – just like what a true Christian experiences.

### In Or Out Of The City?

So, they cannot go into the city if they are *left out* or *with-*

*out.* Either way, they are *completely out of the city.* These beings cannot enter the city *until they grow spiritually.* They are still like Cain in the land of wandering (The Land of Nod). It is all about who can go into the city.

So, whether they are *left out of the city* or *without the city*, the meaning is the same. *They are not in the city.* The passage is about who has and who doesn't have, a right to The Tree of Life, "<sup>15</sup>*For without are dogs and sorcerers and whoremongers and murderers and idolaters and whosoever loves and makes a lie.*" These are the children of Cain (or Satan) who have never repented. Then, there is a shift to the *here and now*, "<sup>16</sup>*I Jesus have sent mine angel to testify to you these things in the churches. I am the root and the offspring of David and the bright and morning star.*" Notice, Verse 17 jumps ahead and Christ is not mentioned, "<sup>17</sup>*And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that hears say, Come. And let him that is athirst come.* [Christ said to drink freely on The Last Great Day]. *And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely.*" In other words, it is a *call* to the people who *repented* in The Lake of Fire. Now they must start at square one and *grow spiritually.*

*The Ten Commandments* must be written in their hearts. The Bride of Christ along with God's Holy Spirit will help these people (with The River of Waters which will bring Salvation). This is what God will have Christians do in His kingdom.

Colossians 2:1-3 <sup>1</sup>For I would that you knew what great conflict I have for you and for them at Laodicea and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh;  
<sup>2</sup>That their hearts might be comforted, being knit

together in love and to all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God and of the Father and of Christ; <sup>3</sup>In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge.

So, for *eternity*, you will be busy learning more and more about what God has planned for you. Revelation 22 shows the beginning of *The Kingdom*. God is making all things *new*! There may be many more dimensions of the universe. You, along with others in The Kingdom of God will finish what Adam and Eve *never started* (let alone finished). The pieces are all coming together now. At this time, Eve's children must enter Paradise. God's puzzle is solved with the simplest and most *profound gift* anyone can receive. It is *the gift* which God, Himself, planned for you to receive. What unlocks all the doors and opens your heart to The Glory of God? *Love is the key*. Everyone must have *God's love*. The more God reveals His riches to you, the more it will impact everyone. As your love for Him and His love for you *grow*, you will experience a life rich with God's *glory*. Then, eventually, *everyone* in the world will be *saved*. They will grow in *spiritual abundance* and discover *the riches "In Christ."* This is according to God's everlasting love for each and every one of you.

This is the story of The Magnificent Glory of God and His *gift* to you. Love makes the world go round. God's love is the power and the answer to *the puzzle of life*. His power will be pure and *In All* but only when everyone's heart is open to His simple, yet most majestic *gift of love*. This gift is for you to be in The Kingdom of God and have Eternal Life.